



www.ebookscat.com

Intro



"Yeyi wena sfebe vuka". That was my stepmom. I pretended like I didn't hear her minutes later she goes out of the basement (Yep that's where I sleep). Then she came back in but I didn't care I fell cold water on my face damn she poured cold water on me.

S'mom: Awundiva ndithe vuka.

Me: Am up geez bitch. I say rolling my eyes.

S'mom: What did you say?

Me: Nothing ma.

S'mom: Go make breakfast for me and my daughter bloody hoe.

Me: Ok let me take a shower.

S'mom: Tsek shower my left foot go make me and my daughters breakfast. Mind you the time is still 04:00.

Me: Ok mom.

S'mom: Do I look like your mom? Ndifane ne sfebe esingunyoko mna? Ulahlekelwe ngunyoko? Rhaa ndimhle too much for ufana nonyoko.

Me: No mom. She slapped me I held my cheek with tears rolling down my cheeks.

S'mom: From now on you call me Madam or Mam am too hot to be your mom.

With that said she walked out. I made my way to the kitchen made breakfast for her, her daughters and my Dad. Then went to wake her daughters up. I went to a guest room took a shower wore my school uniform. I went to sit in the kitchen high chairs then made cereal eat so quickly so she can't see me I washed the bowl I was using. I wash the pots I was waiting for them to finish eating. After their were done eating.

Dad: MBALI!!

Me: Ndiyeza Tata. I went to the lounge.

Dad: We are done eating wash these dishes. I nodded then washed the dishes.

S'mom: Bye little bitch.

Me: Can I leave with you am gonna be late for school.

Nosi: Do we look like we care hoe.

Kuhle: Let's get out of here before we catch her disease.

They went out I was left with Dad he helped me wash the dishes then gave me R200.

Dad: I love you Mbaliyothando.

Me: I love you too Dad.

Dad: I promise one of those days I'll get you out of this situation.

Me: And I believe you dad.

Dad: Go Nana you are late.

He said kissing my cheek I ran out then went to catch a taxi I got to school my boys were waiting for me. Yes am a straight girl but I am friends with boys I was kak late. I ran to class and apologized for being late.

Chusta: Finally I thought you were not coming little sister.

They treat me like their little sister. They love me so much sometimes I forget that back at home am being abused.

Me: Am here now chill.

Owam: Are you fine?

Me: Yeah am good.

Owam: You are not I mean what happened to your cheek.

Lonke: That witch happened right?

Me: Yeah.

Chusta: Why is your dad not defending you?

Me: I don't know dude.

Mam: You four shut up.

Us: Yes Ma'am.

School was fine it was now break. I was chilling with the boys.

Me: You guys won't believe what happened?

Them: What?

Me: After the witch and junior witches left Dad hugged me and told me he loved me.

Them: And?

Me: He kissed my cheek and said " I promise one of those days I'll get you out of this situation".

Them: What?

They were shocked my Dad never defends me. Well he tried once or twice but that witch always wins.

Me: It doesn't end there.

Them: Proceed.

Me: He gave me money.

Lonke: How much?

Me: A whole fucken R200.

Chusta: Finally he remembered you are his daughter.

He said rolling his eyes.

Me: Gay tendencies bro.

Chusta: Mxmm. He rolled them again.

Owam: Use it wisely keep it safe.

Lonke: Use it to buy pads and toiletries. We well cover your taxi fare everyday.

These dudes bought me pads when I got my first period. The witch wanted me to use cloths but I had bro's who care about me.

Me: What there's no need for that.

Owam: We are doing it.

Me: But.....

Chusta: No butts Mancane.

Me: Thanks guys.

We bro hugged. Then bell rang indicating it was time to go back to our classes. School was nice the boys gave me R150 my taxi fare. I was going back to that living hell hole. I got home took a quick shower I didn't want them to know that I showered and wore my PJs. Cooked supper ate my food wrote my homeworks. Then went to bed.

Ohh where are my manners my name is Mbaliyothando Mandoyi. Am 17 years old doing grade 12. I live with my stepmom Nokuthula Mandoyi, my dad Luzuko Mandoyi and my stepsisters Nosipho 19 years old she's doing grade 12 yep she repeated 3 grades and Okuhle 18 years old doing grade 12 she also failed they are partying their lives away and sleeping with different boys.

We are in different schools praise the Lord for his kindness. My mom passed away when I was 14 years old then we started living with Nokuthula and her little witches. I have 3 friends or let me say 3 brothers Chumani Jonas 18 years old, Lulonke Cekiso 18 years old, Owam James 18 years old.

Insert 1.



Mbali's pov



Nosi: Sfebe vuka and run me a bath.

I didn't respond I just kept quiet.

Nosi: Mama she doesn't want to run me a bath.

Her mom came in running she was holding a sjambok she pulled the blankets then slapped me.

S'mom: Awuvanga uba uthini uNosipho?

Me: Ndimvile Ma'am.

I went to wake up Kuhle up then made her bed, went to Nosi's room made her bed I went to dad's room he was still sleeping I woke him up.

Dad: Princess. He said smiling.

Me: Dad. I returned the smile.

Dad: Thatha bhabha. He said giving me R400. I looked at him and smiled I was happy.

Me: Enkosi Tata.

Tata: Hamba before afike uSpitfire. I will make my bed.

We laughed then I went out and made breakfast for the family I went to take a bath. Wore my uniform went back to them I took the dishes washed them. I was early today cause the boys were waiting for me at

the gate. In so many years this is my first time being early. I ran to them.

Lonke: Cuddle cakes.

Me: Biggie.

Chusta: Unjani?

Me: Am good nina?

Them: We good.

Chusta: You happy why?

Me: My dad is so wonderful the last time I laughed with him it's when mom was alive.

Owam: What did he do this time?

Me: He's been helping me with the slavery work.

Them: What?

You could tell they were shocked.

Me: Yeah he gave me R400 and he called the witch "Spitfire"

Lonke: A whole Lily?

We all laughed.

Chusta: At least he remembers he has a daughter.

Me: Yeah biggie. Guys I have R600 from my dad and R130 from you.

Owam: Glad we could help you.

Me: Thanks it's highly appreciated.

Lonke: Don't worry we are family.

Chusta: And family sticks together.

Owam: No matter what happens.

Me: I love you guys.

Them: We love you too princess.

Me: Group hug.

Them: Bring it in.

We hugged I was beyond happy my dad loves and I have 3 amazing brothers. I have all the support I need. We were called to the assembly.

Principal: As you all know we are about to start June exams so you guys are given a week off to study.

Us: Yhaaa.

Principal: Dismissed.

Owam: Ladies & gentlemen.

Us: Gentlemen?

Owam: McDonald's before we go home nobody knows we left school early especially spitfire.

Chusta: Am in.

Lonke: In.

They all turned their attention to me and gave me puppy eyes.

Me: Y'all are fucking cute it's a yes.

Them: Yay let's go.

We went to McDonald's these dummies were flirting with each and every girl and they got their numbers.

Me: Are you going to call them for real?

Chusta: Yeah I haven't got laid in a long time.

Owam: I need to tap that pussy and leave.

Lonke: Fuck her so hard that.....

I cut him off. These guys are something else.

Me: Ewww my virgin eyes.

Chusta: Virgin Mary. He says in a gayish tone.

Lonke: Gay tendencies.

Me: Are you even straight bro?

Chusta: Am straight.

As we were chatting make fun 1 girls came in
Chusta didn't hesitate he pulled me to sit on
his lap.

Me: What's that for?

Chusta: Play along.

Me: Fuck buddie problem? He nodded

Girl: So this is what you left me for?

Me: He left you for a snack. A entire snack.

Girl: You left me for a gold digger? How
could you? I thought you loved me.

Me: No he left you for a mine. How could he
not? I mean look at me honey am pelepele
hot. You thought wrong ml. He's my entire
snack.

Girl: Why w.....

Me: Just shut the fuck up. You guys were a
mistake. Jonga sweetie this is not up for
discussion. I don't debate with gold diggers.

Just walk away or I'll make you walk the choice is yours.

Girl: This is not over.

Me: I don't remember saying it's over. This is just the beginning.

She left crying as soon as she was out of the door I moved from Chusta. Looked at him.

Me: Fix your fuck buddie problems bro.

Chusta: Thanks little one but keep your noise down.

I looked around people were looking at us. I stood up

Me: Uhmhm I was looking out for my biggie and please going back to eating. Fix your fuck buddie issues wena. I said looking at Chusta.

Chusta: Heard you princess.

Owam: You can sit down.

Lonke: Nope we are leaving.

I check the time damn it's late but hey I kept my cool.

Me: Guys it's late and Spitfire is gonna murder me.

Wam: Masambeni.

Lonke: Let's call a cab.

They called a cab when I got there spitfire was waiting for me at the gate she was holding a sjambok. I was scared. I slowly walked in.

S'mom: Yeyi wena mohosha ubuyaphi?

Me: Bendi....

She didn't even let me finish she dragged me inside told Kuhle to lock the gate. She threw me on the floor. She beat me up I screamed for help, I called Dad's name, I called mom's name I cried upon Jesus name. I cried nobody answered. She beat me up with the help of her daughters. I was now bleeding I was lifeless. They left me there lying lifeless. I laid on the cold floor. I reached for the landline called dad he didn't pick up I called Chusta.

Me: Chumani help me.

Chusta: Nana is that you?

Me: Chuma you must help me. Am dying.

Chusta: Where are you?

Me: Home.

Chusta: Hang in there am coming.

I hung up. I must have fallen asleep cause I was woken up by Owam picking me up from the cold floor. He ran to the car and Lonke opened the door for us. Chuma was driving like a maniac. I passed out woke up at the hospital. A doctor walked in.

Dr: Miss Mandoyi am Dr Ndlovu.

Me: Doc.

Dr: How are you feeling?

Me: Am good Doc.

Dr: That's great.

Me: Doc I need to go home.

Dr: You ne.....

Me: Doc just give me the bloody documents and let me go home.

Dr: Uhm coming.

He came back signed the documents and I went home. I found dad pacing up and down.

Dad: Where were you I was worried. He said in a concerned tone. I guess Spitfire is not here.

Me: I was at the hospital.

Dad:: What happened?

Me: Spit happened.

Dad: Am sorry I'll find a way out. I promise I'll get you out of here. Go take a shower meanwhile I'll order pizza.

Me: Dad thank you.

Dad: It's my duty baby.

Me: Ok.

I took a shower wore my PJs watched TV with dad. I cleaned up the mess went to the basement and slept.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 2





Mbali's pov



I woke up early today I quickly took a shower phela am not allowed to take a shower or eat decent food it's always been bread. Today it's Saturday I made breakfast for my family. Cleaned I mean I washed the dishes, washed the clothes, mopped the floor and cleaned their rooms. I went back to the basement took my money I went to the mall bought toiletries then went back home the time was 11:00am they were still sleeping. I watched TV something that I know might get me in trouble.

S'mom: Go make my bed before I beat you up.

Me: Yes Ma'am.

I went to her room found dad sitting on the couch. I went in made their bed cleaned their room. Dad called me.

Dad: Mbali.

Me: Tata.

Dad: Yizohlalapha ntombam.

I went to sit next to dad.

Dad: Uphilile?

Me: Ewe tata.

Dad: I mean physically.

Me: Kusebuhlangu Tata but am getting there.

Dad: Okay bhabha. Suwara nontombi ndizokukhupha apha but am still thinking of a way.

Me: Akhongxaki Tata.

Dad: I love you baby.

Me: I love you too Dad.

Dad: How much money do you have left?

Me: R530 tata.

Dad: sapha wallet yam.

I took it gave it to him. He gave me R500.

Dad: Spend it wisely nana.

Me: Enkosi Tata.

Dad: Pass school and make me proud okay?

Me: I will dad I promise.

Dad: Ungahamba.

I stood up found the witches eating the food I cooked. I passed them went to the basement hid my money. Took my books and studied.

S'mom: Mbaliyothando Mandoyi!!!

Me: Ma'am? I shout with frustration and anger.

S'mom: Get your as here.

Me: Ndiyeza.

I went to the kitchen. They were taking pictures.

Me: Ma'am.

S'mom: Iron the clothes, change the bedding, wash these dishes and wash my shoes.

Me: What!?

S'mom: Did I stutter?

Me: Uhm no.

S'mom: Good girl.

I took the laundry from the washing line since it was a little bit windy, I changed the bedding, washed the dishes then washed her stinking shoes. Kuhle came to me.

Kuhle: Uhm hey.

Me: What do you want?

Kuhle: I just wanna talk.

Me: Talk.

Kuhle: Am sorry. What did she just say she's sorry, what for?

Me: For?

Kuhle: For everything.

Me: What?

Kuhle: I mean am sorry for all the mean things I've been saying, for helping my mom beat you up and for insulting your late mom. It was wrong of me can you please find in your heart to forgive me. I was influenced by

mom and Nosipho plus I don't like all this partying and sleeping around am really sorry.

She was crying I always knew kuhle was kind.

Me: You forgiven now wipe those tears of and stop crying cause you are ugly. She chuckled.

Kuhle: Can we please be friends?

Me: There's no need to be my friend.

Kuhle: I really want to be your friend.

Me: Uhm Ooo-k.

Kuhle: Can I help you wash those.

Me: Grab a shoe.

She laughed and took a shoe we washed them together. I must say it was nice chilling with her. We cooked together it was awesome.

We went to sleep.

****Following day (Sunday)****

I was sleeping peacefully. Then someone woke me up. I open my eyes I saw Kuhle.

Kuhle: Wake up.

Me: Why?

Kuhle: You have chores remember and I won't be able to help you if mom is awake.

Me: Ok fine.

I woke up took a plastic basin poured warm water. Went to my room. I was about to wash my face Kuhle walked in.

Kuhle: That's going to take forever.

Me: It won't.

Kuhle: Come to my room and take a shower.

Me: Am fine.

Kuhle: Just follow me. I'll borrow you my toiletries.

We walked to her room on the passage we bumped into dad. He looked at us and smiled.

Kuhle: Oh oh.

Me: Hey dad.

Dad: Hey it's good to see you too bonding.

Kuhle: Uhm ok.

Dad: No need tiptoe when am around.

Kuhle: Are you sure you are fine with this Dad?

Dad: Yeah it's fine.

He left us there. We ran to Kuhle's room I took a shower then wore my black dress and flops. We did all the slavery chores.

Kuhle: Am tired.

Me: Am used to it.

Kuhle: I didn't know it was this hard you made it look so easy.

Me: Well it's not easy.

Kuhle: It's good to know. Can I tell you something.

Me: Yeah.

Kuhle: Nosipho is my half sister and you are my half sister.

Me: Meaning?

Kuhle: Nosi's mom is my biological mom and your dad is my biological dad.

Me: What?

Kuhle: Yeah. Mom got married to your dad because of me.

Me: Wow.

S'mom: Mbaliyothando kuphi ukutya?

Me: Mom kuyeza.

S'mom: Andingonyoko andifani nalanto ingunyoko.

Me: Yes ma'am.

Kuhle: Are you fine?

Me: Am good baby.

Kuhle: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

She walked out and left me. I took the food and served them. They ate I sat in the kitchen thinking can't she just kill me. Am sick and tired of her and Nosipho. What am I living for can't I just die with my mom. They were done eating I took the dishes and washed them. Kuhle came to me and helped me wash the dishes.

Kuhle: I love you and I'll always be with you.

Me: I love you more and I'll stick with you baby.

Kuhle: Let's finish up and we can go study.

Me: Okay thanks.

Kuhle: So do you have a boyfriend?

Me: What? No you?

Kuhle: No I don't.

S'mom: Mbaliiii!

Me: Ma'am?

S'mom: Get your ass here. I went to her room.

Me: Ma'am.

S'mom: Pack all your trash and follow me.

I went to the basement and packed all my stuff. Kuhle came in and helped me. I

followed my stepmom she took me to the shack outside our house and told me I'll be staying there from now on. The shack had a single bed it had no mattress, a cupboard, plastic basin, a table and a wardrobe. All the things in here were in a bad condition but it doesn't matter.

S'mom: You want something you must work hard and I'll pay for you.

Me: Meaning?

S'mom: You do all the chores then at the end of the week you get paid R250.

Me: I could live with that.

S'mom: Good.

She went out. I went to basement took the mattress, my money and toiletries. I sat there I mean there was absolutely no food. Am no longer allowed to eat food from the house or use their kettle. Kuhle walked in. She came in and hugged me.

Kuhle: Let's go to the mall.

Me: You know your mom won't allow that.

Kuhle: Trust me she will.

I stood up we went to the house.

Kuhle: Mom.

S'mom: Yeah.

Kuhle: Can you please borrow me your black card.

S'mom: Yeah no problem.

Kuhle: Mom she's coming with me she will help me carry my stuff.

S'mom: No problem baby. She took the card and we called a cab.

Me: That was easy.

Kuhle: Easy pizzy like a lemon squisy.

We took the cab it drove us to the mall. We paid and went out. Kuhle withdraw R2500 and gave it to me.

We bought a kettle, iron and ironing board, food, stove and a basin. We went to McDonald's and ate went back home. I took the things to my room. Cooked and ate.

Threw myself on the bed and slept.

Insert 3



Mbali's pov



😓*****1 week later*****

Today it's Monday and we are going back to school. I woke up went to fetch water then boiled the water while I was waiting for water I made my bed, brushed my teeth. I took the basin mixed the water took a bath wore my uniform and tied my afro into a messy bun. I went to Kuhle's room.

Me: Hlehle. I kissed her all over her face.

Hlehle: St..op... ple....ase...You...tick....ling me.
She was giggling.

Hlehle: Not cool sis. She frowned.

Me: Just wake up.

Hlehle: Am up geez.

I went to wake Nosi up as usually she was her annoying self and shitty. I made breakfast then went back to my shack to eat I had bread and eggs. I went back to the house then washed the dishes. Dad gave me R100. I rushed to school I was late as usual. I

noticed I don't have a pen. I was sitting next to Owam.

Me: Wam.

Wam: Yothando.

Me: Cella undiboleki pen.

He stood up then stole a pen from that tall guy in our class. He came back to me. I just laughed at him.

Wam: Thatha lil one.

Me: Arghh Enkosi biggie. I kissed his cheek.

Miss Ndlovu handed out papers we started writing. Soon exam was over. I went to our spot these boys were eating.

Me: My brothers .

Them: Mancane/Lil one/ Bunny.

Me: Selembe.

I frowned.

Chusta: Sehluthi.

Lonke: Funa sithini?

Me: How about siyothenga ukutya?

Wam: Kuthengwa ngubani?

Me: Chusta no Wam.

Chusta: Awunyi?

Me: No ways. Futhi hambani silambile.

They went to buy our food. It was 4 pies and 4 cold drinks. We ate then chatted went to class we were just chilling. After school we walked home with my brothers. I got home the place looked like a pigsty I felt like crying I have to study. I quickly cleaned.

Hlehle walked in. I went to my shack changed and wore my

Hlehle: Aren't you suppose to be studying?

Me: I am but this place looks like a pigsty.

Hlehle: Go study I'll finish up.

Me: Are you sure?.

Hlehle: Am sure cuddle cakes.

Me: Thanks. Mcwaa mcwaa I love you.

Hlehle: Way more go Nana.

I went to my shack took my books and studied after 4 hours I went back to the house cause spitfire was coming back. I

cooked macaroni and mince. They ate and I washed the dishes the time was 19:00 pm it's still early. I went to my shack took my money. I went to Hlehle's room.

Me: Pssss Hlehle. She turned and looked at me.

Hlehle: Uthini?

Me: Masambe siye eShop.

Hlehle: Yima ndiyeza. She stood up wore her gown.

Hlehle: Masambe.

We walked to the shop and bought bread, eggs, juice, rama and cheese. We walked chatting about random stuff.

Me: Bitch I need to get a job.

Hlehle: Same here so when are you getting a job?

Me: Am not sure but after I finish writing my exams.

Hlehle: We will go job hunting together then boo.

Me: Yeah and I need new clothes.

Hlehle: Same here Nana. So any boyfriend?

Me: Nope besides my brothers are watching me like a hawk.

Hlehle: Tell them to chill bruuh.

Me: And then there's your mom.

Hlehle: Vele be worse mntase. Uthanda undidika kwezimini.

Me: Wenzeni?

Hlehle: She's starting to mistreat me.

Me: Xollo njena.

She chuckled. We got home I went to my shack made myself food then took a bath wore my old PJs and went to dispose water. Took my books and studied.

Insert 4



Mbali's pov





Today it's Wednesday and am not writing this means job hunting. I woke brushed my teeth and washed my face Kühle & Nosipho are going to school. I went to the house woke them up, made breakfast they ate and went to school. I went back to my shack and started cleaning. I took a bath wore my yellow summer dress and my white Tommie kicks. I take my money and closed my shack the door is old and I can't lock it. I've been here the entire morning and am hungry.

Lucky is not on my side am heading home on my way back home I spot a club I decide to go there. I go to the barman.

Me: Morning.

Him: Hey, want anything to drink?

Me: No.

Him: How can I help you?

Me: Am looking for a job so I was wondering if you could me.

Him: Uhm... Ok follow me.

We walk to a office. He knocks.

Voice: Come in. It's a male's voice and it's very scary. He walks in and I follow him. This office is nice and it has that male touch.

Barman: Uhm boss there's girl looking for a job.

Boss: Let her in. He says his backing is facing us so I can't see his face.

Barman: She's here.

Boss: You can leave. He walks out leaving me with this man whose not facing me.

Me: Uhm hey.

Boss: You can sit down.

Me: Thank you. I say sitting down.

Boss: What type of job are you looking for.

Me: Any job even if it's cleaning I'll take it.

Boss: We have enough cleans but I can offer you another job. He says turning and facing

me he looks like he's in his early 40's. He looks at me with lust

Me: Uhm.....ok.

Boss: You are young and beautiful and probably desperate for this job.

Me: Uhm yes.

Boss: I give you a job but you have to do something with me.

Me: What do you want me to do Sir?

He stands and walk to me. He is close to my face way to close to my face. He touches my thighs. I move back and hit the wall. He kisses my lips and squeeze my breast.

Boss: I want you to sleep with me.

Me: You are crazy. Yes am desperate but not this desperate. I say pushing him.

Boss: You want this stop acting like you don't. He pushes me to his table and I fall right on his table. He gets in between my legs.

Me: Move old man.

I try pushing him but he is too strong. I kick him in his balls. He bows and holds his balls. I jump off the table. He pulls my leg I fall on top of him.

Boss: Look at what am about to eat. He say licking his lips and his on top off me. I start screaming and kicking.

Boss: Scream all you want this room is sound proof.

Me: Fuckkkk!!! I say in anger and frustration. Am not about to lose my virginity to a old funky man. I kick him in his stomach, bite his arm this old man chuckles.

Boss: Feisty I like.

Me: Fuck you old man.

I grab the bottle of whiskey and I hit his head he holds the back of his head I kick him and took a tray hit him one more time in his head and I ran out. On my way out I saw a girl dressed like a prostitute and she seems high. I follow her and she leads me to a room

full of girls and there are 2 men giving them drugs. I slowly exit making sure they don't see me. On my way the barman calls me I walk to him and sit down.

Him: Got a job?

Me: Nope.

Him: Sorry maybe next time.

Me: Yeah, look I have to get going.

Him: Bye and good luck on getting a job.

I walk back home with disappointment written all over my face. Am tired, hungry, jobless and I almost lost my virginity. I get home I find Hlehle making herself a sandwich and she's cooking supper.

Me: Hey. I say sitting on the high chair.

Hlehle: Baby.

She gives me her Colgate smile.

Me: How are you?

Hlehle: Am good and you don't look good.

Me: Am hungry, tired and jobless.

Hlehle: Am sorry, what's with the scars on your hands.

Me: Longgggggg story.

Hlehle: I have all day. She says handing me her sandwich.

Me: Don't worry I'll make my own sandwich.

Hlehle: You need it more than I do.

Me: Thank you. I say taking a bite.

Hlehle: How does it taste?

Me: Mm I'd give you 8/10.

Hlehle: At least I tried, so the scars?

I told her everything. Me and Hlehle are crying she's shushing me. I wipe my tears.

Me: I need to study.

Hlehle: Ok baby. Be fine Nana.

Me: Don't worry am fine.

I stand up and walk to my shack. I throw myself on the bed and start crying on days like this I miss my mom I stand up and take my school bag. I must have fallen asleep while studying cause when I woke up it was

dark. I boiled water meanwhile am waiting for the water to finish boiling I pack my books. I took a bath wore my PJs and went to sleep.

***** Following day(Thursday)*****

I woke up took a bath wore my school uniform it's just a skirt, white long sleeve shirt, white socks and school shoes they are old and torn it would have been better if it was summer but I can't control the weather then I combed my afro and let it loose. I walk to the big house and do all the slavery. I walk to them as they were eating.

Me: Can I talk to you?

S'mom: What do you want bitch?

Me: Uhm can you please build me a back room.

S'mom: We don't have money.

Me: With my weekly salary.

S'mom: I'll think about it.

Me: Thank you.

Nosi: I hope you are not considering helping this bitch.

S'mom: Like I said am still thinking about it.

Me: If you build me this back room I promise I won't bother you ever again.

S'mom: Fair enough. She thinks hard am a little bit nervous.

Dad: So what do you say babe? I just roll my eyes.

S'mom: Let's do it cause that way she'll be out of our hair.

Me: Thank you so so much.

Nosi: Just wash the dishes slut and bring me my school bag am running late for school.

I bring Nosipho her bag and wash the dishes as fast as I can. I walk to school, school was cool it was now after school. I walk to the gate with my brothers they hug me goodbye and leave.

Voice: Hey Nunu .

I turn around and am meet by Hlehle smiling.

Me: Hey Smiley.

Hlehle: Unjani Nana?

Me: Am good . What brings you here?

Hlehle: Am here to fetch you so we can walk together.

Me: Ohh wow. Her school is 10 - 20 min from mine.

Hlehle: Are you coming or not?

Me: Am coming.

Hlehle: So I have a boyfriend.

Me: Whose the unlucky guy? She chuckles.

Hlehle: He's not unlucky tchii. She says hitting me playfully.

Me: Oh trust me he is.

Hlehle: Mxm anyway It's..... No you have to guess.

Me: Hlehle I don't like guessing.

Hlehle: Mxm I'll tell you anyway. It's Zubenathi.

Me: As in Tar Zuu?

Hlehle: Yeah. She says blushing and playing with her fingers.

Me: OMG she's blushing.

Hlehle: Stop it. She blushes even more.

Me: This bitch is inlove. Kuhle you love him. Am screaming.

Hlehle: Yes .

I scream.

Hlehle: Usifakela amehlo. She say hitting me playfully.

Me: Sorry am just happy for you.

Hlehle: Thank you.

I've been screaming the entire way, Kuhle dated a lot of guys wealthy guys but she didn't love any of them she loved their money.

Hlehle: Stop screaming.

Me: Arghhh look we are home. I say opening the gate and sadness is written all over my face.

Hlehle: Don't worry we will have more time to talk.

I walk to my shack and she walks to the house. My place is a mess this has Nosipho written all over. I start cleaning then Kuhle walks in.

Hlehle: Masambe siyotya.

Me: Wait let me finish cleaning.

Hlehle: Let's eat then we will clean.

Me: Gimme 5 min.

Hlehle: Nope 5 seconds.

Me: Fine. I kick my school shoes off and wear my sleepers. We are eating leftovers from last night.

Me: Hlehle it's too hot to be inside. Today it's not so cold like other days there's a little bit of a sun.

Hlehle: What do you suggest we do?

Me: Let's chill outside.

Hlehle: I can't say no to those cute eyes. We take our plates and walk outside. As we were

talking I see her boyfriend but I play cool I wanna scream. I continue teasing her she's mad.

Hlehle: Tsek yazz yadika kunya.

Me: So Hlehle what did the guy do? I say laughing.

Hlehle: I was so embarrassed and my.....

Tar Zuu: Akumnandi. He says smiling.

Hlehle: Babyyyy. She says running to him. I just smiled.

Me: That's my cue to leave. I say standing up.

Hlehle: Hayi uyaphi? She shouts.

Me: Slavery chores are calling my name. I shout back

Hlehle: Ndiyeza vhaa.

Me: Ngabuyi late I need someone to accompany me to the mall.

Hlehle: Yothenga ntoni?

Me: A girl needs school uniform.

Tar Zuu : Cela uhambe wedwa ndifuna hlala no Babe.

Me: Hamba babe mna ndihambe ndedwa?

Tar Zuu: I can pay you.

Me: 🙄🙄🙄.

Tar Zuu: R200.

Hlehle: Mali engaka?

Tar Zuu: Anything to spend time with my girl.

Me: Hayike mayize.

Tar Zuu: Ayinanyawo lemali. He says taking R200 out of his pocket I stand up and walk to him.

Me: Enkosi Bhut' Zubenathi. I look at Hlehle and smile.

Me: Minus R200 kwimali yamalobola. I say running back inside since we were standing on the streets.

Hlehle: Fuck you!!!

Me: Takes two to fuck wanna join me?

Tar Zuu: Hayi Tsek. He say chuckling.

Hlehle: Yabhora kanene wena.

Tar Zuu: Yintoni wathula Lura. He says to his friends. Tar Lura: Akho weyi mjita.

Me: So nizondikhapha ndiye erenki?

Hlehle: No.

Tar Zuu: Yes. They say at the same time.

Tar Lura: Nzamkhapha.

Me: Ok let me change.

Tar Lura: Sure.

Hlehle: Thank you Lurra.

Me: Am coming.

Hlehle: Siyahamba thina.

Tar Zuu: Bye Mancane.

I take our plates and rush back in. I go to my shack and wear my white dress and black flip-flops I tie my afro into a messy bun and put Vaseline on my lips. I took R600 from my money and went out.

Me: Sorry to keep you waiting.

Lurra: No problem, Semhle.

He says smiling. His smile madado.

Me: Enkosi.

I say smiling back.

We walking this guy is not say anything he keeps on stealing glances at me then smiles alone. He decides to break the ice.

Him: So ungubani?

Me: Mbaliyothando Mandoyi.

Him: Luncumo.

Me: Awunafani?

Him: Mphati.

Me: Ok. Silence takes over we reach the taxi rank.

Me: Enkosi for undikhapha.

Him: Akho weii. He is not stopping or going back.

Me: Awujiki?

Him: Nope ndiyakukhapha.

Me: Uya nam emall?

Him: Khona ngxaki?

Me: Nope.

Him: Masambe ke.

We reached the mall we bought 2 white shirts, 1 grey trouser, 3 white socks, a tie and a school jersey.

Me: Masambe siyobhatala.

Him: Ziphelele ezonto?

Me: Yeah ziphelele.

Him: Thatha half jersey, school skirt and school tracksuit .

Me: I don't have enough money for that.

Him: I'll pay.

Me: What!? No!!!

Him: I insist.

Me: It's a no.

Him: At least choose 2.

Me: Uhm tracksuit only.

Him: No problem.

He paid for the tracksuit like we agreed on.

This guy is creepy he doesn't talk. We walking back home eating ice cream he bought it. He's holding plastics I'd say this guy is popular judging by the way people are

greeting him doesn't he get tired? I mean it's annoying. We finally reach the gate I take the plastics from him and I say my goodbyes. I walk to my shack to my surprise Hlehle is lying in my bed playing with her phone.

Hlehle: Nana.

Me: Baby.

Hlehle: You good ?

Me: Hayibo zondibuza lonto oko?

Hlehle: I care about you and

Me: And ntoni?

Hlehle: Hayibo wena no Lura.

Me: He's creepy.

Hlehle: Njani ba creepy?

Me: Haska uthule lamntu.

Hlehle: Kange nithethe?

Me: Uthe ndimhle and.....

Hlehle: Aaaaaaaahhh. She's jumping up and down in excitement.

Me: Sungxola rhaa. Then Nosipho came in running.

Nosi: What you doing to my sister?

I kept quiet.

Nosi: Am talking to you.

I didn't respond again she slapped me.

Kuhle: Just stop Nosi!!!!!!

Nosi: You are defending her?

Kuhle: Get out!!

Nosi: Can't bel.....

Hlehle: Out!!! She's says pointing at the door.

Nosi: I'll be back.

Hlehle: I doubt. She pushes her to the door.

Hlehle: Goodnight .

Me: Night .

Hlehle: I love you.

Me: Way more .

They finally left. I took a bath made food then revised. After a few hours I got under covers that's when I realized mhle uLurra.

He's cute pink lips they look soft, he's smile

is amazing , he's tall and dark. Why am I thinking about him? Fuck let me sleep.

Insert 5



Mbali's pov



Today it's cold but I have to wake up. I take a bath and wear my school uniform. I make myself coffee and bread with rama and polony i eat and rinse my plate. I walk to the house to my surprise they are all up this means I woke up late I make them toasted bread, bacon, eggs, russian and orange juice. They eat and leave their dishes it's only me and Hlehle left in the house she's washing the dishes and am sweeping the floor I quickly finish and help her wipe the dishes we

finish ohh and she gave me her blue Nike school bag since she has a lot of school bags and mine is old. I rush to my shack and take my books so I can put them in my new school bags. We lock the house and rush out.

Me: Hlehle hurry up and lock the gate.

Hlehle: I can't.

Me: Let me help.

Hlehle: No go I'll catch up with you.

Me: Are you sure?

Hlehle: Yes baby.

Me: Thank you .

Hlehle: Pleasure .

I walk away leaving her behind but I make sure not to walk too fast. As I am crossing I didn't see a car this old woman almost knocked me but she spotted me and braked I held on to the bonnet so I can not fall I shout " Sorry am late for my exams my stepmom left me behind" she nods and smiles then shouts "No problem good luck with your

exams get going you are gonna be late" she laughs. I quickly move away from her car and she waves goodbye. I run so I can quickly cross phela this is a four-way. After crossing I try to catch my breathe then Lura and Zuu appears.

Lura: You not wearing your jersey. Hlehle runs to us.

Hlehle: You left your jersey and kuyabanda. She's also trying to catch her breathe. We are both holding on to our knees bending breathing in and out.

Me: Thank you and we are late for our exams. I say taking my tracksuit jersey.

Hlehle: Fuck mine starts in a minute. I check her watch.

Me: Am writing in 7 minutes.

Hlehle: Let's hurry.

Me: Sorry we can't talk we are late.

Hlehle: Super late. Rain check baby? She say smiling.

Zuu: Sure baby nam ndiyaleqa.

Lura: Thatha mali Yothando khwele taxi.

Me: Kukude erenkini besides my school is a few minutes away.

Lura: Thatha uyeke undiphikisa. He says giving me R20.

Me: Enkosi.

I say taking the money from him. We quickly run to the taxi rank we had no choice cause they were accompanying us. We get there lucky us the taxi only needed 2 people. We saw this beautiful lady she was about to sit and she looked at us.

Lady: Y'all are late for school?

Me: Yes and we are writing exams.

Hlehle: Our stepmom left us behind and took her daughter with her. That really surprised me.

Lady: You can take my seat.

Me: What!? Am sure you are rushing to work.

Lady: No, am one hour early.

Hlehle: So we can take this seat?

Lady: Yes.

Me: Thank you, may God bless you. I say hugging her.

Lady: No problem now climb on. She says breaking the hug.

Hlehle: Thank you one more time. She says getting in. We climb on, the taxi drops me first. I rush to class fuckkk am late.

Me: Sorry Mam am late.

Mam: Sit down my baby. Mam Zulu understands that I live with my stepmom so yeah. She gives me a question paper. I walk to my sit. Lonke sighs. We write for two good hours. We walk to our tree.

Me: Lonke what's with the sigh?

Lonke: I was worried you aren't coming.

Me: Am sorry I had you worried. I woke up late and had to clean Kuhle helped me so we were both late.

Chusta: Kuhle did what? He asks in shock and in disbelief.

Me: She helped me biggie she's been a good friend and sister for the past few weeks.

Wam: That's good I guess Lil sis. As we were chatting Luvo approaches us.

Luvo: Sho majita.

Them: Ola/ moja/ awe.

Luvo: Uhm meddy.

Me: Mjita.

Luvo: uTar Lurra uyakubiza.

Bros: Tar Lurra? They are shocked.

Wam: Balance me really quickly uyintoni ku Lurra?

Me: Uthi ndiyayazi.

Lonke: Hamba uyakubiza omnye.

Me: Uphi Luvo?

Luvo: Uhm phaa. He says pointing at the school gate hayi oLurra banezinto. I stand up and walk with him.

Me: Ufuna ntoni?

Luvo: Andiyazi.

Me: What if ufuna undibulala? He laughs.

Luvo: Soze jonga uba uphi anyways bye. He say walking away I walk to Lura.

Me:Ola.

Lura: Sundinyela bulisa kakuhle.

Me: Molo Bhut' Luncumo.

Lura: That's right. I laugh at him.

Lura: Suhleka rhaa.

Me: Sorry.

Lura: Uright? He says smiling Arghh his smile . Ngase ancume oko. Fuck who am I kidding ngubani ohlala encumile?

Me: Ewe wena?

Lura: Ndiright ulambile?

Me: Nope.

Lura: Utye nini? Cause break iqale 5 minutes ago.

Me: Uhm ekuseni.

Lura: Exactly am sure ulambile ngoku. He whistles I guess he is calling the security

guard the guard comes over and Lura gives him a plastic the guards gives it to me.

Lura: Vula kaloku.

Me: Kukho ntoni apha?

Lura: Vula uzobona. I open it he bought me chocolate muffins, King pie, coke, dairy milk mint chocolate, lays, teddy bear and lollipops that's so sweet of him. Arghh angenza boyfriend eright but andikho apho.

Me: Enkosi.

Lura: Pleasure. He says smiling.

Lura: Awutyi kengoku?

Me: Nzotya.

Lura: Yitya ngoku ndifuna ukubona usitya.

Romantic .

Me: Not ng....

Lura: Ulambile?

Me: Ewe.

Lura: Yitya ke bhabha.

I ate we ended up sharing andikwazi utya kukho umntu ongatyiyo so I forced him to eat then the bell rang.

Lura: Hamba bhabha.

Me: Byeeee.

Lura: I'll see you after school.

Me: Ohk. I walk to class with my plastic I sit down with my Bro's we are doing nothing teachers are marking.

Wam: Sapha. He says grabbing the plastic from me.

Chusta: Kukho ntoni?

Wam: Lays, chocolate muffins, dairy milk, teddy bear and lollipops.

Lonke: Lura and Yothando sitting in the tree
K-I-S-S-I-N-G.

Me: Fuck you!!! I say hitting him playfully.

Chusta: Yathandwa ngu Lurra.

Wam: So niyajola? He says opening my chocolate.

Me: Hayi Wam bekuthengelwe mna.

Chusta: "We are quadruplets and there's nothing you can do about it." He says mimicking my voice. That's my statement when I take their food.

Me: You can't use my own words against me.

Lonke: "Quadruplets share everything together." He's also mimicking me.

Wam: "We are Nicky, Ricky, Dicky and Dawn." He's mimicking me. I hate them.

Me: Mxmmm okay fine.

Lonke: There are 3 muffins here this means you and sbari ate 3 muffins.

Me: Me and who?

Chusta: Sbari!!!

Me: Fuck off!!!

Wam: Am taking the lays.

Chusta: Am taking the chocolate.

Lonke: Am taking the muffins.

Me: Am taking the teddy bear and lollipops.

Chusta: Noba uyanya we are sharing them.

Me: It's not like I have a say in this. I say sulking.

Wam: Stop sulking Missy.

Lonke: Crouse it ain't helping you. He says with muffins in his mouth. He's words are so incorrect.

These dummies ate my stuff but hey they are my brothers and I love them. It was after school the time was 13:00pm. I walk out to my surprise Hlehle is waiting for me at the gate. I hug my Bro's and walk to her.

Me: Bubbles.

Her: Nana.

Me: Uright?.

Her: Am good wena?.

Me: Am super. I say smiling.

Her: Look arts that smile.

Me: Sithini?.

Her: Sibhalwe boyfriend.

Me: Mxmm uyagula masambe.

Her: Siyaphi?

Me: Job hunting.

Her: Ohh yeah that.

Me: Bulibele?

Her: Kind of.

We take a taxi to the town. We reach beautiful shops. We see a beautiful salon I know nothing about hair so Hlehle is the one trying. We walk to the salon Hlehle tries her luck and she got the job. We walk to a restaurant it's beautiful we walk to the restaurant and the manager takes us to her boss the boss is the old woman from early this morning the one who almost knocked me off. She gave me the job and we are both starting tommorow.

Hlehle: Am so hungry.

Me: Same here but we don't have enough money.

Hlehle: Guess what?

Me: You have money?

Hlehle: I have mom's black card.

Me: That's good news.

Hlehle: Let's go to McDonald's.

Me: No problem.

We bought McDonald's burgers then bought a few clothes we took a taxi back home. We are tired as hell my feet are fucking killing me. We walk home on our way home we bump into Lura and Zuu they are walking with their friends. Zuu sees Hlehle and smiles he walks to us.

Me: Niyathanda undibambise khandlela. I say rolling my eyes.

Hlehle: Umona.

Me: Mxxm.

Tar Zuu: Aww Mancane. He's half shouting I don't know why he did but after he said that Lurra turned.

Me: Ayingxolise Tar Zuu futhi andingo Mancane.

Tar Zuu: Uyadelala Mancane.

Me: Mxxm.

Lurra: Ladies mantombazane.

Us: Hey.

Lurra: Ziphi nto zakho?

Me: Eziphi kanene?

Lurra: Muffins, lays, lolli...

Me: My brothers ate them.

Lurra: Batya mali kabani?

Me: Ka Tar Lurra. I say smiling.

Hlehle: Mali bitheni? She asks confused.

Me: Nzokuxelela endlini.

Lurra: Masambe Bhabha. He says taking the two plastics I was holding.

Tar Zuu: Hayike masinishiye.

Me: Bye. They walk away hand in hand.

Lurra: Bhabha ndikhaphe.

Me: Awuceli?

Lurra: Ndiyakucela Bhabha.

Me: Siyaphi?

Lurra: Pha emzini Bhabha.

Tchii undenzani lomfana uBhabha wakhe undenza weak amadolo.

Me: Siyokwenzani?

Lurra: Awudikwa kubuza oko.

Me: Nope and am curious.

We walk to his house he has his own backroom. Uhlala no Gogo wakhe. Avule umnyango intle shem backroom yakhe.

Lurra: Hlala phantsi Bhabha.

Me: Sure. I throw myself on the couch am comfortable around him.

Lurra: Ndiyabuya vhaa. He says walking to the door I just nod and turn the TV on am watching Teen Titans. Minutes later he walks in with a plastic and a takeaway.

Lurra: Thatha Bhabha. He says handing me the plastic.

Me: Thank you.

Lurra: Pleasure awuzuvula?

Me: Nzovula ekhaya.

Lurra: Ohk yiza sitye Bhabha.. I move to sit next to him. It's fried potato chips and fish.

Me: Enkosi. We are eating and talking there and there. We watch Sofia the first then he accompanied me home. He was holding my bags for me.

Lurra: Umhle yazz Bhabha.. Confidence boost.

Me: Enkosi Tar Lurra. I say looking down.

Lurra: Nzokubona ngomso?

Me: Nope. It's heart breaking.

Lurra: Ngoba Bhabha?

Me: Ndiye emsebenzini ngomso.

Lurra: Uyasebenza?

Me: Nzoqala ngomso.

Lurra: Nzokubona late Bhabha.

Me: Asikho sure.

Lurra: Well mna ndisure. He gives me that Colgate smile. Tchii uyancuma lomfana.

Me: Ungajika apha.

Lurra: Yizapha. He says pulling me in for a hug I hug him back slowly. He smells amazing.

Lurra: Bye. He says kissing my forehead.

Me: Bye. I say pulling out of the hug.

I walk home smiling ear to ear. I walk to my shack and put my bags on the floor I throw myself on the bed and hug my teddy bear.
Kuhle walks in.

Hlehle: OMG!!! Where did you get that?

Me: Tar Lurra. I say blushing. She sleeps next to me. We are both facing the roof

Hlehle: Ayisentle.

Me: Enkosi . Busenzani no Tar Zuu?

Hlehle: We went to his house and he gave me roses and chocolates . We played pillow fight, spoke, cuddled and had good sex. My man is gifted.

Me: Eeww. Too much info.

Hlehle: Nawe usezofika moss.

Me: Andinqondi.

Hlehle: Zuu knows how to Fu.....

Me: Phuma. I say throwing a pillow at her she throws it back and walk out.

Am not hungry so I just clean then boiled water to bath. I went to fetch cold water

from the tap outside the house. I took a bath and wore my PJs. I sat on my bed bored as fuck then I remembered I didn't open the plastic I got from Lurra. He bought me strawberries, popcorn, lays, sour worms, chocolate shaped in hearts, tennis biscuits, tropica and a necklace Why is he doing of this for me? I sbwl to hug him but ukude I put my stuff in the plastic and I drift off to sleep.

Insert 6



Mbali's pov



It's morning already I wake up and right when am about to boil water I notice the is no electricity I walk to the house the lights

are on this means they switched the electricity off too bad cause can I use cold water am used to that. I bath with cold water and wear my black jean, black T - shirt and black kicks I tied my afro into a neat bun then made edges. Waking Kuhle up is always a challenge and am not in the mood of playing I shake her she keeps on saying "mmmm" eventually she woke up and took a shower after what felt like forever she got dressed and we made breakfast. On our way out I remembered we didn't make breakfast for Nosi and her mom.

Me: Hlehle we didn't make breakfast.

Hlehle: Abanazandla?

Me: Banazo but u' Spitfire.

Hlehle: She's going to give you a hiding.

Me: Masambe we will make something quick.

Hlehle: On it.

We ran back to the house. Hlehle took 4 plates, cereal and milk.

Me: What you doing?

Hlehle: This is "something quick" masambe.

Me: Order one coffin cause wow your mom is sure going to kill me.

Hlehle: Not when am around.

Me: Uzonkwenzani?

Hlehle: I'll show her flames. I just laughed at her.

We took a taxi to town and we went our separate ways. Mam' Lindiwe(the owner) is sweet she's the one training me. Working here is amazing I mean everyone is sweet one would swear we are Mam' Lindiwe's kids that because she doesn't have kids. Men give big tips to female waiters with big asses, curves and the big boobs some even spank their ass I just wish men could start respecting woman and stop seeing them seeing as sex slaves but I also blame the girls who are flirting they are leading them on. I guess people have different ways off making money and who

are we to judge. Only a few man have respect for women and I love that.

Siya(manager): Mam that gentleman is asking to be served by you. She says pointing at a old man. I walk over to him I take his order as am walking away he spanks my ass I turned and slapped him.

Siya: What's wrong with you? You can't slap our customers.

Me: What's wrong with him? He can't spank the waitress.

Siya: I knew you were trouble the moment you walked in. You can't accuse the poor guy for such a thing am sure you are after his money you little gold digger. He's old enough to be your fucken dad.

Me: Exactly he is old enough to be my dad.

Am not after his money am not a cheap slut I wouldn't be surprised if you were after him rhaa. We were shouting at each like there's no tommorow.

Lindi: What's going on here!?

Siya: She started it. She says with a attitude and folds her arms.

Me: You are so childish. Stop pointing fingers
Siyamthanda act like a matured adult.

Lindi: For the last time what's going on here!?! She's getting angry by a minute.

Siya: She's accusing the poor old rich man of spanking her ass but she was the one who slapped him first. She must get fired she's full of Shit Mam' Lindiwe.

Lindi: Mbali what happened?

Me: This old man spanked my ass then I slapped him.

Man: Stop accusing me of shit little girl. He stands up and looks at me. Hee this is unbelievable it's the man from the club I suddenly got scared I started shaking. I started crying.

Siya: Look at her crocodile tears this little hoe.

Lindi: That's enough Siya!!

Siya: Mxm.

Lindi: What was that?

Siya: Nothing.

Lindi: Siya I've had it with you okay!? She's half shouting.

Lindi: Sir can we please finish this in my office. They walk to the office am not going without Lindi they must think again.

Lindi: Stop crying baby come on. She says wiping my tears. She would make a perfect mom. We walk to her office.

Lindi: Sir what do you say happened?

Man: I don't know she slapped me out of nowhere.

Lindi: Siya is that true?

Siya: Yes Mrs Zulu.

Lindi: So you guys are saying she slapped him out of the blue? Wafaka impama nje esthubeni?

Man&Siya: Yes. I just laughed at them.

Lindi: Anything funny?

Me: This man owns a whole fucken club!!

Lindi: I don't see a problem in that.

Me: Exactly he owns BLUE MOON!! I don't know why am shouting.

Man: Stop lying you little whore. Insults, insults, insults am you used to being insulted so I don't care I just wanna free the poor little girls. I mean some of the girls are younger than me am sure their families are worried sick.

Lindi: Blue moon?

She says she is shocked everyone knows Blue moon and they know about the prostitution but rich men always get what they want. Lindi reaches for her phone and calls the cops I guess these girls will be freed. My shift is finally over I take my bag and walk to Hlehle's work place.

Me: Bubbles.

Hlehle: Nana. Her smile is the best no her smile is the second best Lurra's smile is theee best.

Me: U'rytt babe .

Hlehle: Am fine baby wena.

Me: Am good.

Hlehle: Am almost done just give me 5 minutes.

Me: No problem sweetie meanwhile I'll clean for you.

Hlehle: Thank you cakes. So wena no Lurra?

Me: u'obsessed ngaye neh?

Hlehle: Uphambene am only asking cause wow niyafanelane.

Me: Thank you. I say with the brightest smile on my face.

Hlehle: Did I hear a whole fucken "Thank you"?

Me: What!? No you didn't.

Hlehle: Ohh yes I did, am so happy for you guys you deserve each other. She gives me her smile she's so happy.

Me: Hlehle we are not dating.

Hlehle: Can't wait to tell Tar Zuu.

Me: Wtf? Ungenaphi uZuu apha?

Hlehle: Zuu is Lurra's bestiie and your biggie.

Me: Angahleka nenja kuse ifile uZuu.

We burst out laughing.

Us: Siyakhaba ker.

People burst out laughing.

Us: I wonder nihleka ntoni.

They laugh again.

Me:Ncamsil.

Hlehle: & shiit.

Guy: So you guys are twins.

Me: No but great minds think alike.

Hlehle: All in all we think alike.

Kumnandi apha shem. The owner's brother is gay and he is 17 he is a whole fucken mood.

His name is Kwanda. Yeah we are chatting making fun of each other.

Kwanda: So guys tell me about the most sex embarrassing moment.

Me: It must be funny such a pity cause am.....

Hlehle: Virgin Mary.

Kwanda: Aphume u' Mary angozava amahlazo ethu.

Me: Unye right there. Hlehle qala.

Hlehle: I don't remember which year was it but I was at this guy's house so after sex he want to make food ndasheka ekamereni so ndifuna itowel yozosula *laughs* ndathatha itowel ecream white imbi mani imdaka ndazozula I thought yenyawo kanti yeyobuso. We laugh so hard.

Me: Dead.

Kwanda: Bury me now.

Me: Wena you deserve la advert ithi " fethasi, diamonds and also sphokazi".

Kwanda: as for uSphokazi.

Hlehle: How khuju.

Kwanda: "warre are you".

Hlehle: " a triiii"

Me: "the world's most expekusivi trii".

Kwanda: You killing me. He says holding his stomach.

After a hour or so they were done we locked up. Kwanda's big sister dropped us erenki Kwakwa didn't want to leave. We took a taxi home sehle and we walked I still can't believe what Hlehle did. As am walking someone hugs me from the back I turn around I see Lurra .

Lurra: Bhabha.

Me: Lurra ma Lurrazin.

Zuu& Hlehle laugh.

Lurra: Wtf bazalwene.

Me: Uthini Lurrazin?.

Lurra: Ndibuhlungu Bhabha.

Me: Utheni Lurrazin.

Zuu: Aww Lurra malukuluku..

Hlehle: Malukuluku?.

Me:Lurra thee Amarula ndonda
engumfowethu.

Zuu and Hlehle laugh.

Hlehle: Burn!!!!!!.

Zuu: weyidi and shit.

Lurra: Masambe Bhabha ku'rough apha.

Me& Hlehle: Agudli indlu ayabaleka amagwala.

Zuu burst out laughing.

Lurra: Ncamsil bzl. He says laughing.

Zuu & Hlehle left. I was walking with this beautiful creature. Mhle man lomntu soze ni'understand.e I mean his pelepele hot. We are getting to know each other I think am falling for him. We reach the corner ujika apha.

Me: Bye. I say walking away.

Lurra: Celli hug.He says opening his arms.

Me: Okay.

I walk back to him I hug him his hug is so warm. He lift my head up with his index finger he pecked my lips 4 times then went

for it I responded I don't know how to kiss but I did it. Those soft lips on mine Thixo mkhulu. He pulled out why?

Lurra: I love you Bhabha.

Me: I d..... He shut me up with another kiss.

Lurra: Be safe. I just nodded.

Arghhh the bitch got her first kiss. I walked home smiling like an idiot. I was too tired to bath I just threw myself on the bed and went to lalaland

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 7.



Mbali's pov.



Today is a brand new day and am writing my last paper this means I can go to work more

often and make more money. Who knows maybe I might build the backroom myself who am I kidding I don't have enough money. I wake up to my surprise my uniform is ironed, there's warm water and breakfast. I take a bath and Kühle barges in. She's dressed in home clothes I guess she's not going to school.

Hlehle: Hey babe.

Me: Hey Yakhokuhle.

Yakhokuhle is her full name but she love Okuhle.

Hlehle: Unjani.

Me: Am good bubbles and thank you.

Hlehle: No sweat baby. Can I ask?

Me: Sure.

Hlehle: So do you love or like Lurra.

Me: Uhm....um.. I don't.

Hlehle: Wenza bani isibhanxa?

Me: Haybo Hlehle andikwenzi isibhanxa.

Hlehle: I can see it in your eyes
UYAMTHANDA.

She shouts the last part.

Me: I love his lips more.

Shit why did I say that now Hlehle is going to
be on my case.

Hlehle: What you kissed him?

Me: Uhm... No. I say looking away.

Hlehle: OMG you kissed him.

Me: Pass me my towel and my body lotion.

Hlehle: Don't change the topic Missy. She
says handing me my towel.

Me: Ohk I kissed him Hlehle and he said he
loves me.

Hlehle: What get out of here. So you guys
are dating?

Me: Uhm no.

Hlehle: Hayi Marry njani? I mean you love
him and he loves you.

Me: Yakhokuhle asijoli.

Hlehle: Kodwa nizojola.

Me: We are not sure. Can you please.....

Hlehle: Style your hair?

Me: Yes please.

Hlehle: On one condition.

Me: Am listening.

Hlehle: You let me do your make up after school.

Me: It's a deal.

Hlehle is studying beauty or something like that. I know nothing about this beauty things.

Hlehle: Thank you soooooooooo much.

She made two neat buns and edges. After a little while we were done with everything. We went to the house. Wow she also made breakfast for the family I only need to wash the dishes then am good to go. They are in the dining room eating they don't even know how to make breakfast. They ate finish and Nosi left for school we were left with Spitfire and Dad.

Dad: After school you make sure to come back straight home.

Hlehle: Why?

S'mom: Stop asking questions and do as I say.

Me: Am going to work after school.

Hlehle: Me too.

S'mom: Make sure you are here at 5pm.

Hlehle: Yeah whatever.

She accompanied me to school all the way she was talking about Lurra. I wonder what that kiss meant. Am walking to class am meet by my beautiful brothers God knows how much I love them. When mom died they also lost a mother the lady loved all of us.

Wam: Mrs Lurra.

Aww madoda my mans.

Me: Awunyi perhaps?

Wam: Nope.

Chusta: Unjani Bunny .

Me: Ndi'blessed nina?

Lonke: We good .

Wam: So wena no Lurra?

Me: Nonke nizobuza lonto?

Chusta: We are asking as caring brothers.

Me: Nina? Caring? In the same sentence?

Lonke: Ewe.....

The bell rang thank goodness.

Wam: Saved by the bell.

Me: And I thank whoever rang the bell.

We went to class wrote our last exam I am so happy. After 3 hours of writing we were done. School is out early today so no break for us. Am not willing to go home early.

Lonke: So are you dating Lurra?

Me: Nope but we kissed. I say smiling ear to ear.

Chusta: Mary got her first kiss halala. They start ululating.

Me: Gay tendencies.

Wam: How was your first kiss?

Me: It was amazing. I give it a P for perfect.

Chusta: Perfection Bunny.

Me: I mean look at his lips they looked juicy but they are more than juicy.

Lonke: Catchile idyan. He says hitting me playfully.

Me: Ayi' catchisi boys.

Wam: No strings attached Bunny. I nod yes.

We laugh.

Chusta: Kissing buddy type of shit.

Me: Murdered. I say laughing.

Lonke: This was a mistake it wasn't suppose to happen. He imitates a girls voice.

I laugh and hold on to Lonke.

Chusta: Bunny is not trying to catch.

Wam: Ayifuni u' catch.a idyan.

Lonke: One night stand uTar Lurra.

Tears roll out of my eyes. I love my brothers bethuna.

Wam: Ufonyeze i'kiss uTar Lurra.

Me: Ha.a Owam. I say laughing.

Lonke: Wathi uBunny no more.

Chusta: Abafana base Jozi no more.

Us: Bananga abanamali for sure.

Chusta: bathanda uchoma with their Mama's Moto. He mimicked moonchild sanelly. Yerr the way he said Mama's moto killed me.

I wipe my tears holding my stomach.

We walked to the gate laughing our asses out. The boys are going to the club and am not joining them. We walking to the gate suddenly they all stop laughing. You know the look your friends give you when your crush is around that's the look their gave me. I looked around I saw Tar Lurra he walked to us.

Lurra: Ola.

Boys: Sure.

Lurra: Bhabha.

Wam: Hamba "Bhabha".

Chusta: uBaby akasebenzi.

Hayini zizinja ezi.

Lonke: No strings attached.

I chocked on my saliva then we laughed. Tar Lurra was lost.

Lonke: Kissing buddy.

We burst into laughter.

Even Tar Lurra laughed then looked at me ndajonga kude.

Lonke: "Ayi' catchisi boys." He says mimicking me.

Us: Sellout.

Me: Deep menemene.

Chusta: Phixiphixi.

Wam: Nyoronyoro.

Lonke: Snitch.

Wam: Masembeni boys.

I hugged them and kissed their cheeks. Tar Lurra took my bag and we walked to the park he hugged me from the back. We sat on a bench.

Me: Tar Lurra.

Him: Bhabha.

Me: So Tar Lurra.....

Him: So ntoni Bhabha?

Me: What did the kiss mean?

Him: Curiosity killed a cat Bhabha.

Me: Am not a cat Bhut' Luncumo. He chuckled.

Him: It meant I love you Bhabha. When you with the right person, you know this is the best feeling ever. Bhabha holding you is the best feeling I love you so much, please give me a chance Bhabha.

I didn't know what to say I just kept quiet. I looked at him Arghh his cute Madoda.

Him: Please say something.

Me: Uhm I don't what to say, I don't know if you really mean this or you playing me.

Him: Bhabha look deep into my eyes and tell me what do you see.

I moved close to him so I could look "deep" in eyes.

Me: I see.....

I didn't finish he moved close and kissed me
I responded. I was enjoying the kiss it was
slow and passionate he pulled out.

Me: Mhh?

Lurra: So uthini Bhabha.

Me: I guess giving it try won't hurt.

Lurra: Nyani Bhabha? He says smiling.

I just nodded with a smile on my face. He
hugged me more like squeezing me. I spent
the rest of my day with him. Later I went
home I wonder what does the devil want.

Insert 8



Mbali's pov



I get home and walk to my back room and
changed my school uniform. I went to the

kitchen so I can cook supper. Nosi walks in fuming she looks at me with disgust I don't care am over the moon am even humming. The time was 04:16.

Her: I see my man is making you happy.

Me: Your what?

Her: Don't act like you don't know what am talking about.

Me: Am not a traditional healer boo thetha kuvakale.

Her: Am talking about Luncumo bitch.

Me: Ohh you mean my boyfriend. I say smiling and she charges towards me.

Her: Stay away from my man you bloody slut.

Me: You know it takes a slut to see another slut.

Her: Am warning you girlie. He says slapping me, I hold my cheek.

Her: You stay away from my man or else.....

Me: Or else what? You gonna slap me? You going to call your mom?

Her: You don't want to try me girlie.

Me: I do honey. She moves close and grabs the knife I was using.

Her: Stay away from him, I don't want to hurt a hopeless motherless whore of an orphan.

She says brushing my cheek using the knife. Am scared of what she might do with this girl you will never know, I don't want to show her how scared I am, I decide to keep my brave face on.

Me: Am motherless but did you notice this is my mother's house this means you and your mom are homeless.

Her: Funny but girl my mom rules this house. Your mother is dead. THAT HOE YOU CALLED A MOTHER IS DEAD, DID YOU HEAR ME? SHE'S DEAD.

She's shouting that really hurt me. When mom died my dad changed I always felt like I was a nuisance in his presence and he was

always with Nokuthula it didn't even take him 6 months to move on. After a week mom died he got married to Nokuthula and introduced their kids to me at first Nokuthula was sweet a few weeks later she turned into a devil. A tear escaped I quickly wiped it.

Me: It's funny how you think your mom will always be around to protect you. You are nothing without your mom, you can't do a single thing without her, you'll never learn how to stand up for yourself Mama's baby, nxxx. Am not staying away from Lurra sweetheart forget it.

Her: My mom will always be around, your mom died from whoring around she died from diseases that she got from the different man she was sleeping and I guess like mother like daughter you little whore. Luncumo is mine okay? She says pointing the knife in my stomach.

Me: It sounds like you are talking about Nokuthula cause Noluthando(my mom) would never. Think twice if you think am breaking up with Lurra.

Her: If you don't stay away from him I'll stab you. The knife is still in my stomach.

Me: I've been stabbed before. You and your mom have stabbed me before so I wouldn't be surprised if you would do it again.

She does the less expected and stabs herself I just stood there for a few seconds and continued with my cooking.

Her: Mom! Mom! Mamaaaa!!!! Her mom comes in running, Kuhle walks she's tired.

S'mom: What happened here!?

Nosi: This brat stabbed me.

S'mom: What!? Am coming back for you bitch. I knew that meant she's coming back to beat me up. She took Nosi to her room.

Nosipho's pov

Hey y'all am Nosipho Jaxa am 19 years old doing grade 12 I dropped out of school and failed once I hate school. Jaxa is my mom's surname I don't know my father and I don't care about him. My mom and Mbaliyothando's are sisters yep they have the same mom and dad but my mom hates Mbali's mom and I hate Mbali. I have a huge crush on Luncumo but he never looked my side I tried everything all he could do was look at that slut called Mbali. I stabbed myself cause I knew my mom and her dad are going to the my side no one would believe a lowlife like her anyways my mom took me to my room and pulled the knife out then wiped my blood and put on a bandage.

Mom: What happened?

Me: She took my man (sob) and when I told her to leave him (sniff) she took the knife brushed it up and down on my neck and cheek (sob).....

Her: Talk to me baby. She says brushing my back up and down.

Me: She called us homeless pathetic sluts and she said (sniff) I am fatherless, ugly, skinny and am a prostitute (sniff) she also said you are dying from different diseases. By the time am finish talking my mom is fuming I can tell she is about to eat her alive. She stands up and walks out of my room I know what this means I follow her she goes to her room and takes a belt and a sjambok. She walks to the kitchen and grabs Mbali by her arm then she beat her slash after slash till she was satisfied then she lets her go.

Mom: Nxx, you better finish cooking before my visitors get here.

Kuhle: Mom why did you do that? You know Nosipho was lying. She says helping Mbali up.

Me: Are you really siding with this thing. I can't believe Akhokuhle how could she side with a cheap slut.

Mom: Sies man snatcher just like her mom.
She says walking to the sitting room.

Mom: You better finish cooking. She shouts
from the sitting room.

Mbali: Am almost done Mam.

She shouts back and finishes cooking with
Kuhle's help of course. I left them there and
went to sit with my mom.

Mom: Can't wait for her in-laws to get here.
That was music to my ears it's good to hear
that she's leaving.

Me: She's getting married?

Mom: I sold her to a man 27 years older than
her. Am so happy now I can have Luncumo to
myself*wink*.

Me: Good job mom, so how much did they pay
for her?

Mom: 100K. She says jumping up and down,
we both scream from excitement.

Me: Am getting a new phone and new clothes.
Am really happy she's finally leaving.

Mom: And we can go on a vacation baby.

Me: Nyani?

Mom: Yes baby.

Me: Yayyyyyyyy. Where are we going Mommy?

Mom: We can go to Durban or any place off your choice.

Me: I'll decide am not sure.

Mom: Tommorow we are going shopping baby.

Me: Let's go to mall of Africa.

Mom: No problem baby.

We continue watching TV. I honestly can't wait for that bitch to go. I can't wait to buy a new phone and new clothes. I stand up and walk to my room, I call my best friend (Siphindile) she answers on the fast ring.

Me: My love.

Siphi: Baby.

Me: Guess what?

Siphi: What?

Me: Mbali is getting married.

Siphi: I always knew she was such a hoe. Who would marry a whore?

Me: A man who is 27 years older than her.

Siphi: What!? She is such a bitch. How low could she stoop for a man.

Me: She stooped too low, they paid 100k for her.

Siphi: Omggggggg, the guy is loaded I guess her man is rich.

Me: Yeah and they are coming today.

Siphi: She's going to live a lavish life.

Me: I guess s-

Mom: Nosipho.

Me: Am coming, bye babe.

Mbali's pov

My body is badly injured I can hardly move around am limping. Hlehle ended up finishing cooking I went to my room. I took a bath with cold water cause I was trying to ease the pain. I sat in the plastic bathtub thinking

of how life would have been different if my mom was here I miss my mom more than anything a part of me died when she died after her death me and my brothers had to adjust to a new life. I remember Owam laughing at me when I told them Mama passed away. His mom passed away after giving birth to him so he didn't know his mom he has two sisters they are twins (Ziphozonke and Ziphozenkosi) they are 21 he said "Lol try a better joke, I was with her yesterday and she promised me that she will cook me spaghetti and meatballs, can't wait to go back home" Chuma saw how serious I was he fainted and Lonke cried like there is no tomorrow. When we got home we saw many cars and people Owam ran to her room and called her he said "Lutha yiza mani ndilambile and ndifumene ne meddy" I looked at him and said "She's gone" he laughed and replied "Mom is not dead, our mom is not

dead tell me it's joke" I replied " I wish it was, she left us, she is no more" I broke down and started crying we sat on the floor and cried in each other's arms. The following day we asked to see her body at the motuary at first they were hesitant but they agreed we walked in I went to stand next to her and cried. Owam walked over to her and held her hand and said " Mama you promised me you would never ever leave me, you said I'll find you home waiting for me with my favorite meal spaghetti and meatballs. How could you break your promise? Mama promises are meant to be kept not to be broken, why did you break yours? How could you Mama? Promise you'll come back Mama, you are sleeping right? I don't even know they why put you here. I love you Mamnune" all 4 of us we hurt by Owam's words. I held her hands she was cold and I kissed her lips everyone was looking at me like I was crazy but I

didn't care if I could kiss her while she was alive why not do it when she is no more. I noticed she had tears in her beautiful cheeks Lonke asked "Is it me or she was crying?" Then Chuma said "her wrists are hurt it looks like someone manhandled her, look at this 5 fingers on right cheek" we inspected her body her neck also had fingers. I was disturbed by Hlehle.

Hlehle: Stop crying baby. She said wiping my tears.

Me: Am not crying Nana. I said in a low tone.

Hlehle: Come on let's warm you up. She helped me out of the plastic basin and gave me her warm onesie.

Hlehle: My mom is calling you.

Me: What does she want?

Hlehle: I don't know.

We found Nokuthula sitting with a old man then she called Nosipho.

Man: Whose my wife?

Us: Wife?

S'mom: She's your wife. She said pointing at me.

Hlehle: What? You must be out of your mind. Then my father walked in with another old, creepy and scary man.

Man2: Afternoon future in-laws.

Us: Future in-laws?

Dad: Yes, Mbali you are getting married to this man over here. He says pointing at man 2.

Me: Hayi niyandiqhela.

The man started shouting each other. Dad and his wife we also shouting at each other I went to my room. A few minutes later Kuhle walks in and we cuddled, she was telling me a story while brushing my hair. We slept in each other's arms.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 9





Mbali's pov



"Vuka silambile thina".

That was my so called stepmom. How the fuck am I suppose to work if am limping?

S'mom: Vuka nxx.

Hlehle: Myeke mama alale omnye.

S'mom: Kukwam apha yeva? Ndim umnini ndlu, what I say goes.

Hlehle: U'wringo akho kwakho apha.

S'mom: Kukwabani?

Hlehle: Kukwa Sis Noluthando.

S'mom: uyambona? Ufile uNoluthando. Ifile lanjakazi ingu Noluthando.

That cut really deep. How does she hate someone she doesn't know? I mean they have never crossed paths. She's brave enough to

disrespect a dead person worse parts she lives in her house, sleeps in her bed, showers in her shower, sits on her sofa and sleeps with her man. I really hate her but am not leaving my mom's house, she must forget it. After those hurtful words I stood up brushed my teeth and washed my face and limped my way to the kitchen. I cooked porridge, I know very well Nosipho won't eat porridge before going to school. I dished up and served them.

S'mom: What's this?

Me: Breakfast.

Dad: This is really nice I could eat it everyday for breakfast.

Hlehle: You must teach me how to cook porridge.

Me: Thanks guys.

Nosi: What on Earth is this?

Hlehle: Porridge, taste it.

Nosi: I'd rather die, am not eating that.

Hlehle: You think you are a white person, yitya sisi okanye uyeke.

Nosi: Am not eating this. Wena (she says pointing at me) make me proper breakfast and take this away.

S'mom: Girly you better make that breakfast quick.

Hlehle: Nithi kuphi apha? Sandton, kuse Kasi apha just because nihlala kwi big house nicinga ningabelunga.

S'mom: Ghetto is on the other side, this is suburb.

Hlehle: We are few houses away from the ghetto. It's either you eat the porridge or go to hell.

Nosi: Am going to school this is pure bullshit. She says standing up.

Nosi: Nxx, Mama can you please take me to school.

S'mom: We will pass at McDonald's.

They leave us with peace. We ate then washed the dishes minutes late dad left. I was chilling outside with Hlehle my head was on her lap. Hlehle is talking non - stop and am thinking about my mom.

Me: I miss her Hlehle.

Hlehle: Your mom?

Me: Yes, I just wish I could see her one more time, hug her once again, see that beautiful smile Hlehle I wish I could hear her sing for the last time. Everytime I take 2 steps forward and 12 steps back am trying to be happy but I can't.

Hlehle: Am sorry baby.

Me: I just wish she could come back. Hlehle am nothing without her I am nothing Yakh'okuhle. How do I live without her? She is the reason am on Earth but she decided to leave me here, I have no one am just this little orphan girl with no mom and my dad hates me.

I say with tears running down my cheeks.
Hlehle: Nana I don't know but I think you should let her rest. Baby you are something, your mom might be gone but she is not forgotten. Sis' Thando is like air now she is everywhere you go.

Me: I can't let her go Hlehle she is everything and more to me. She made me Yakh'okuhle, I tried letting her go but I can't. My life is miserable I wake up everyday longing to see her then remember she is no more. How do I let go? What if I let her go and forget her? Hlehle am afraid to let go.

Hlehle: You can let go Mbaliyothando trust me. She will always be in your heart. I promise you'll never forget her.

Me: I don't want to let her go Hlehle.
She takes out her phone and texts someone few seconds later she puts it in her PJ pocket.

Hlehle: You must let her rest. If you don't let her go her soul won't be at peace she won't rest Nana.

Me: I thought I healed from her death but I didn't. I fooled myself thinking I already let go of her but am still holding on to her with the hope that she will come back to me everything around me reminds me of her. "Bhabha".

I looked up and saw Tar Lurra standing at the gate then I looked at Hlehle. I wipe my tears on Hlehle's lap.

Hlehle: Sorry.

Lurra: There's no need to be sorry, thanks for calling me.

Hlehle: Pleasure.

Lurra: Bhabha yizapha?

Me: Yima ndiyeza.

Lurra: Ha.a Bhabha yiza ngoku.

Me: Ndifuna unxiba uhlamba.

Lurra: U'right nge onesie Bhabha.

Me: Hayi Luncumo.

Lurra: Ndingena?

Me: Ndiyeza ke.

I stood up and walked to him. He picked me up and took me to his room. He put me on the couch and sat next to me.

Lurra: Bhabha. He says kissing my forehead.

Me: Babe.

Lurra: U'right?

Me: Yeah wena.

Lurra: Andikho right.

Me: yintoni?

Lurra: Bhabha awukho right I want you to talk me I'll listen to you.

Me: Ndi'right Suwara.

Lurra: Your mouth says you are fine but your eyes are telling me a different story. You know that our eyes can talk and yours are talking.

I couldn't talk I just start crying and he was shushing me. After a long time of crying I decided to talk.

Me: You know the pain of waking up thinking that you will see your mom then you remember you will never ever have the chance to see her again. I went to sleep that night and when I woke the next morning I was told she is no more by my Aunt Simthandile and I was sent to school that day and I told my brothers they didn't believe me when we got home that's when they realised I wasn't joking. Owam was diagnosed with depression we were taking depression and anxiety pills, Owam didn't want to hear a thing about her being dead even today he doesn't believe it but he is trying to be strong. Chumani was distant for months he didn't talk to anyone he was just a zombie it took him years to adjust to that she is no more maybe he is still adjusting we

will never know. Lonke would just cry himself to sleep we didn't want anything or anyone next to him. He tried committing suicide but his attempts always failed or someone found him in time and I will forever be grateful for that I wouldn't deal with another loss people would always tell him that Noluthando would want us to go on with our lives he always replied "We don't know what she wants she is no more, y'all should stop acting like you loved or knew her". I shut down emotionally I didn't express how I felt I was always shouting at people I didn't trust anyone. Those days a blade, knife and broken glasses looked like they could end the pain I was feeling my family made sure to keep sharp objects away from me. Everytime I cut myself I would feel better and the pain will be no more my heart was no longer heavy every cut eased the pain I felt. I wish I

could just die Luncumo I don't know what am living for I wish I could just die with my mo-
Lurra: Ha.a Bhabha you don't want to wiped those tears. I promise everything will be fine babe.

I pulled him in for a kiss it was slow, passionate and full of emotions then he pulled out and brushed my cheeks with his thumbs.

Lurra: Babe promise one thing.

Me: What's that?

Him: You won't try committing suicide.

Me: I promise.

Him: Thank you.

Me: Do you have painkillers?

Him: I think so.

He stood up and went to the bathroom in his backroom and came back with painkillers and water. He gave it to me and I drank it. We were talking then I started getting dizzy and it was lights out for me.

>>>Few hours later<<<

I woke up and the time was 15:27 Lurra was sleeping peacefully next to me. I looked at him and kissed his forehead. My head was banging I stood up and went to the bathroom took a shower wore his Nike tracksuit and white vest and my flip-flops. I looked for the house keys I could find them I took the knife and opened the door more like broke the door. I walked to the gravesite I went to my mom's grave and hug the tombstone then kissed it.

Luncumo's pov coming.

Insert 10



Luncumo's pov





Am Luncumo Mphati 21 years am about to graduate. My mom left me with Gramms [Makhulu] when I was 5 she left with her rich boyfriend and my father got married to a lovely lady [Asakhe] they have 2 kids. My parents never really cared about me so Gramms was a mom and a father to me. When I woke up Bhabha was not next to me.

Me: Bhabha.

Her:

Me: Bhabha.

I stood up from the bed and went to see if she was at the bathroom but akekho she left her onesie so am not sure what she is wearing. I quickly fix my bed and get dressed. I was about to open the door then Bhabha walked in it looked like she was crying.

Bhabha: Mnt'wam.

Me: Bhabha, ubuyaphi?

Bhabha: Suwara I won't try committing suicide I just went to see my mom.

I sighed. She threw her self on the couch.

Me: You have to let her go.

Her: I know, I just don't know how to do it.

Me: Talking helps Bhabha.

Her: Who am I suppose to talk to?

Me: Talk to me Bhabha.

Her: The thing is I grew up with a loving mom and a loving dad suddenly my dad is a monster. It all started when I was six my dad would go out late at night and come back the following day [sigh] everytime mom asked where he went he would get angry then one day he came back late and mom asked him why was he late he got angry and beat her up so bad. We later found out that he was cheating with mom not only that but he had a daughter who is one years older than me an-

Me: Where is that daughter?

Her: That girl was Kuhle. Mom had two miscarriages because of dad and I have a older brother but I never had the chance to meet him.

Me: So where is he?

Her: Dad's father took him cause dad was young when he was born basically my grandparents adopted him but he passed away so they say.

Me: You don't believe them?

Her: My grandparents are the most qualified liars. They never liked my mom they also tried taking me from my parents but my mom told them where to get of that made them really angry. You know mom's body had scars when me and my brother went to see her body at the mortuary they were still pink and she also had tears on her cheeks.

Me: What if someone killed her?

Her: Who would want to kill that angel?

Me: Not everyone saw her as a angel.

Her: Sucingela Luncumo.

Me: Ndiyatsho nje but Bhabha she had tears it means something happened before she died.

Her: Ha.a she died at night we were all sleeping and my dad was away with work.

Me: Don't you th-

Her: I've thought about it and I don't think he did it.

Me: I'm just saying Bhabha.

Her: Change the topic if you don't want us to fight.

I love spending time with Bhabha uyethetha mani and she gets pretty angry when I try talking about her dad killing her mom she said it herself that her dad was abusive and why would he be away the night his wife dies. I know no one wants to think about his/her dad killing his/her mom all am saying she must think about it. I think we fell I asleep

on the couch cause I was woken up by Bhabha shouting.

Her: Luncumo!!!!

Me: Yintoni?

Her: Masambe before my stepmom gets home.

Me: But Bhabha am sleeping.

Her: Do you want her to beat the living shit out of me?

Me: We don't want that.

I said that getting up from the couch. Am walking her home she's short she keeps on looking up everytime she wants to say something. We finally reach the corner. We kiss and I watch her walk home. I went back home. Ndafika uMakhulu ephaka.

Her: Ncumo.

Me: Gramms.

Her: Ebekhona uSindiswa.

Sindiswa is my mom.

Me: Ufuna ntoni?

Her: Andimazi ufike endibhudela uSindiswa uyamazi nawe hee uya' slaya uSindi. She said that clapping her hands.

Me: Wenzeni Mama? I said that laughing at her.

Her: Your mom is slaying, imnandi imali yendonda I must get myself a man.

Me: Hayi Hayi Mama umnt'wakho yena?

Her: Yhoo wasifulathela uyise I need to move on.

Me: Awukwazi u'move on. He is your ride or die.

Her: Luncumo he is no more I also have needs as a woman njengo mntana ka Noluthando.

I choked on my saliva.

Her: When am I meeting her?

Me: Hayi uhamba ngo 200.

Her: Yazz mhle and uyahlonipha, ngubani igama lakhe?

Me: Ndiyambongela, ngu Mbaliyothando.

Her: Ndifuna abazukulu.

Me: Mncinci for lonto uBhabha.

Her: Tchi seyingu Bhabha.

Me: Ubumbone phi uBhabha?

Her: Ngoku nanisilwa e'mall.

Me:E'mall?

Her: Ewe beniyothenga impahla. Ndifuna abazukulu Luncumo.

Me: Yazz kumnandi okukutya.

She just laughed. We washed the dishes and she went to bed I also went to my flat I got under covers and slept. My phone rang.

Me: Zubenathi ufunantoni?

Him: Godmother called.

Me: Uyadika lo Godmother.

Him: Yeer I hate that thing.

Me: Uthi kutheni?

Him: andiyazi but...

Us:"When Godmother calls we answer".

Me: Ndiyeza but Godmother must stop calling at night am not a witch.

I dropped the call. I really hate Godmother.

Mbali's pov.

Am chilling with Kuhle in her room.

Her: So Bhabha how about we visit Kwanda tomorrow?

Me: Nawe na?

Her: Nam na ntoni?

Me: Andilifuni eligama lika Bhabha.

Her: Moss uLunc-

Me: Ewe uLuncumo not wena know the difference.

Her: Ok, so did he pop the cherry?

Me: Cherry?

Her: Did you guys..... You know Uhm?

Me: Did we Uhm?

Her: Did you guys sleep together?

Me: Oh you mean sex? Ha.a we haven't got there.

She just nodded. We went to sleep cuddling.

>>>>Next morning<<<<

Work is one tiring place I decided to take two shifts I haven't been to work. I really need the money maybe I could get my self a phone and talk to Simthandile [my aunt] she is my favorite. As am working I see Nosange [Maka Lonke] walking in she looks beautiful. I walk to her table.

Me: Sis Sange.

Her: Barbie doll.

Me: Unjani.

Her: Am good, so you work here?

Me: Yeah, I got tired of depending on my dad and his wife cause wow.

Her: Tell me when they touch you, okay my baby? She says caressing my cheeks.

She orders and leave she also invited me for dinner at her house. I knock off and am tired am even lazy to check up on Hlehle's work place. Today I got tips I really missed Nosange she is the best I'll go to her house tommorow today I need my bed. I take a taxi

home when I get home my dad is watering the plants and Spitfire is sweeping outside. I walk in hee Nosipho is cooking and she is also making tea.

Voice: Nosipho!!! That's Simthandile this explains why they are cleaning. Spitfire is scared of Simthandile.

Me: Sim sim baby.

Her: My bitch.

Me: Uphi?

Her: My room.

I ran to her room and hugged her she kissed me all over my face and tickled me. I missed her so much. Sim is my mom's younger sister she wanted me to stay with her but her and her husband can't take care of me because of the money she earns and I also don't want to leave my mom's house. I just need to convince dad to kick Noks and Nosi. Staying with Sim is going to be nice seeing them tatazel makes me laugh. Sim once beat Noks

up and made her clean, she tried fighting with Sim but the girl knows how to fight.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 11



Mbali's pov



Sim: Makuvukwe. She's shouting.

Hlehle: 5 minutes makazi.

Sim: Andivani namavila. Nokuthula!!!

Me: There is no need to shout Sim.

Sim: Tsek vukani. Nokuthula siphilisdudu?

Hlehle: What does my mom know about cooking porridge?

Me: If you want breakfast from Noks be ready to eat cereal.

Sim: She'll learn. Vukani niphume kwalapha ekamireni yam.

We slept with her last night.

Hlehle: It was nice sleeping with you Makazi. She nodded and went out. We woke up made the bed and went to brush our teeth when I was about to take a bath Sim shouted.

Sim: Siphi isdudu?

Hlehle: She really wants porridge.

Me: Tell me about.

I said that rolling my eyes. We went to the kitchen Sim was teaching Noks how to cook porridge, Nosi was scrubbing the floor she looked like shit I think she has a hangover and my dad was at work. I took the broom and went to sweep outside and Hlehle was cleaning the bedrooms.

Thera: Hola heiita.

Me: Thera.

Thera: We miss you small.

Me: We?

Thera: Yeah me and the crew.

Me: Jonga Thera I was a kid and my mom just passed away I needed something to vent on and you guys gave me that. I will never do drugs ever again.

Thera: Eshee you think you are better?

Me: Am not saying am better Thembalethu am saying get your life together and stop being a drug addict.

Thera: You think I'll listen to you? Oko ujola no Tar Lurra ucinga uncono.

Me: Sudika Thembalethu am not going to do drugs ever again sundidika.

Thera: Uziphakami-

Me: Hamba Thera.

Him: Eshee uyand-

Me: Thembalethu!!!!

He left. Me and Thera went to the same high school but he dropped out cause of his drug addiction. We used to be friends but nowadays you can't trust him the cops have a

lot of charges against him rape, drug dealing, illegal firearms and stealing. He changed a lot he was smart at school till this day I don't know what happened.

Sim: Nokuthula yintoni le? You call this porridge hayi I give up.

I burst out laughing. I can hear her shouting at Noks she hates people who can't follow instructions am sure the entire Gauteng heard her shouting. I finish sweeping Sim is inspecting everyone's work that's Sim for you. We now sitting in the dining room.

Hlehle: Makazi?

Sim: Yintoni?

Hlehle: Do you know Nokuthula and Luzuko sold Bhabha to two old men. They are old enough to be her father.

Nokuthula stood up she knew all hell was about to break lose.

Sim: Uyaphi?

Her: Am going to pee?

Sim: We are eating sit down and eat.

Her: But-

Sim: Uyalwa?

Noks had no choice but to sit down.

Sim: Ngubani uBhabha?

Hlehle: Mbali, her boyfriend calls her Bhabha.

Me: You can't shut up?

Sim: Tchii she got her self a man finally I'll stop being the strict mom and go back to being that hot, young, wild and fresh Mamacita.

Me: Hayibo Simthandile.

Sim: Yima Kuhle you said they sold Nana.

Hlehle: Ewe for a lousy 100k but Nana put her foot down and said no.

Sim: And no one told me?

Me: Hayi wethu I didn't get married.

Sim: U'sweet too much kukwa Earth apha you can't be sweet or people will shit on you.

Mbaliyothando eat or be eaten you have to be strong.

Me: Am sure the neighbors heard you.

Sim: Unyabile mani. Nokuthula mandinganyeleki.

Nokuthula nodded.

Sim: Awukwazi uthetha ngoku?

Her: Ndiyakwazi.

Sim: Jonga sisi ngumntana ka Noluthando lo if you want 100k thengisa u'chicken legs wakho.

Sim calls Nosipho chicken legs. Me and Hlehle laughed. Nosi frowned.

Noks: Haska Mbali is use-

Sim: Hlamba lomlomo.

She said pointing her with a spoon.

Uyathanda ukulwa uSim.

Me: Uyangxola Simthandile.

Sim: I can ngxol all I want this is my sister's house.

Noks: She is no more.

Sim: Ewe she is no more we get that but I am yes more basically this is also my house. How can you hate your own sister like this I knew you hated Nolu but getting married to your sister's man and abusing her kid.

Me: Wait what?

Hlehle: Yeah, wait what?

I looked at her she looked at her plate.

Sim: Me, Nokuthula and Noluthando are sisters.

Me: Ndaze ndakuva zwindini.

Hlehle: Nosi learnt this from Nokuthula moss.

Noks: Nolu was always the clever, beautiful and loved one.

Sim: Sundiphendula!!!

Noks kept quiet and played with her food.

Sim: Eat that pap and make sure you finish eat.

Noks: I won't eat this.

Sim: Yitya Nokuthula Jaxa.

Noks: Mandoyi.

Sim: Luzuko didn't pay lobola for you. Why do you hate your sister so much?

Noks: She dated my crush, gave him a son and got married to him then gave him a daughter. Azande [my mom's really name] was loved by everyone, she was clever and-

Sim: Thula msindo.

I laughed Sim gave me a death stare.

Sim: Azande was sweet, respectful and she had morals, you should have focused on your books than whoring around.

Noks: Simthandile you think am sc-

Sim: Tsek!!! Mop this floor.

Noks: Nosipho just mopped it.

Sim: Am saying do it again.

Noks: But-

Sim: Mop this floor or I will mop you.

She clicked her tongue and went to her room.

I followed her.

Me: Sim baby.

Her: My sugar and ding ding.

I laughed.

Me: Hayike S'bu.

Her: Thetha Mnt'wam. Oh shit you are no longer mine.

She held her head dramatically. I chuckled softly.

Me: Uyayazi moss impilo yalapha.

Her: Yeah.

Me: I was thinking how about they build me a backroom and I'll take care of me. I mean I have a job that pays me well.

Her: Consider it done doll.

Me: Thank you.

Her: Do you have a phone and a bank card?

Me: Shit I don't.

Her: I guess we are going shopping and I know a few builders.

Shopping with Sim is tiring she bought the whole mall. She bought me clothes, phone, shoes and sling bags guys ndiliphara she must

understand I don't need sling bags. I was prepping to go over to Sange I got done and left.

Me: Sange!!

Her: Sitting room.

Everyone is there. Owam, Lonke, Chuma, Lunga and his friends, Lonke and his dad.

Me:Fam.

Them: Small.

Lonke: Bhabha.

He was mimicking Lurra. Me & the boys laugh. Sange dished up for us we were eating making one hell of a nosie. Bhut' Lunga's friend was starring at me and that made me super uncomfortable.

Me: Sundinjonga bafo.

Lunga laughed.

Me: Cause wow I can't eat if you have something to say you better say it now or forever hold your peace.

Chuma: Wedding vows.

They burst out laughing.

Guy: I have nothing to say.

Me: Good cause you are making me super uncomfortable. You want me to eat your food for you?

Guy: No.

Me: Good boy my girl.

Dinner was nice we are playing video games. Bhut' Lunga thinks he is a detective he wants us to update him about everything in our lives.

Lunga: So uyajola small?

I just looked at him then shifted my attention back to the TV.

Wam: Ewe.

Chuma: Ma Lurra madoda.

Them: Lurra?

Us: Yes.

Lunga: You can't date a dru- just break up with him.

Dad: Ngoba kutheni?

Lunga: Just break up with him Princess.

Sange: Break up?

Lunga: Ewe Mama, there is no little sister of mine that is gonna date that boy.

Me: Uduru umgidi Lunga.

Wam: Homecoming is expensive.

Lonke: There's no need to tolik.

Guy1: Trust me it's for the best.

Sange: Lol, you think this is America. Mlungisi [Lonke's dad] talk to your son.

Mlu: Fix what ever issue you have with that boy cause he is dating your little sister.

Me: Mlu uduru umgidi.

Guy2: That guy is bad news.

Me: Utsho.

Lunga: Nana just break up with him and find someone better.

Chuma: Don't break up with him.

Me: I was not going to do that am not a lunatic.

Lonke: Good, Lunga fuck you and your problems Yothando loves him.

Wam: You are controlling Lunga. We are humans we have feelings.

Lunga: He'll break her heart.

Me: Let him break it.

Wam: We will help her pick up the broken pieces together.

Lonke: Like we always do.

Wam: Stop acting like uzokhalela kuwe.

Sange: Uyazicelela.

Lunga just stormed out his friends followed.

We played video games then Mlu and the boys drove me home. I got home found Hlehle drinking coffee.

Her: Finally you are here. I've been trying to call you.

Me: I had a long ass day.

Her: What happened?

Me: [sipping on her coffee] I had a fight with Bhut' Lunga. He wants me to break up with Luncumo.

Her: Is he mentally stable?

Me: I don't know, I told him I won't he stormed out.

Her: Fuck him. If you don't want to do it then don't.

Me: Trust me I won't.

Her: You won't believe what happened after you left.

Me: Gobhoza mgobhozi.

She laughed hayibo I want to know what happened.

Her: Sim beat Noks up.

Me: Why?

Her: Sim said Noks is disrespectful and full of shit. You should see mom she has blue eyes. Sim wanted to teach her a lesson.

Sim: I wanted her to know ubani ugabhadiya. She says opening the fridge.

Me: Hamba gabhadiya.

Hlehle: Goodnight.

Sim: Sit down let's talk.

Us: About?

Sim: Your boyfriend's.

Uba? Mna? I jumped off the kitchen high chair and ran for my dear life. Kuhle followed. I looked for my onesie and I can't find it then I remembered ikwa Lurra I wanted to cry.

>>>>Midnight<<<<<

Sim: Vuka nontombi.

Me: Sim no Hlehle everyone is sleeping it's midnight for fuck sake.

Sim: Fuck sake my left foot, vuka.

Me: Ngoba Simthandile?

Hlehle: Luncumo was shot. She said that so fast and played with her fingers. I sat up straight.

Me: Andiva?

Sim: He's in hospital he was shot two times in his stomach.

Me: It can't be. That came out as a whisper. OMG these people are serious a tear escapes. Hlehle sits next to me.

Insert 12



Mbali's pov



I wore my slippers and went out Hlehle and Sim ran after me. Sim drove us to the hospital I honestly felt like I was loosing my mind. As soon as she parked I jumped off and went to the reception. Then I saw Zuu he waved at me. I ran to him he was covered in blood.

Me: Uphi uLuncumo?

Zuu: How about hello Zuu, unjani, am good wena?

Me: Tsek!!!

Hlehle: We understand you are angry but there is no need to swear at him.

Me: Mandingadikwa. Uphi uLuncumo?

Zuu: Follow me.

We followed him he took us to Lurra's ward. I went in they followed me. I walked to him and held his hand I looked at him and smiled.

Me: What happened?

Zuu: Am not sure but he called me saying he was shot in his stomach.

Sim: Ebephi? Efunantoni? Xa bekutheni?

Me: Hayi Sim.

Sim: Nyawi Sim ntoni? Am curious.

Me: Curiosity killed a cat.

Tears made their way down my cheeks I was smiling and crying at the same time as I recalled what happened at the park. They all gave me a "what the fuck" look.

Sim: Yewethu I want to know.

Hlehle: Khuzeka Simmy.

Zuu: He was in his flat.

Hlehle: At his house? In his own room?

Une'liver lowenze lento.

She's half shouting.

Sim: Une'liver ene papa neziphu ecaleni.

Akaphole guys uSim. Hayibo uyaphola lomfazi.

Hlehle: Awuphole Simmy.

Sim: My man is not in hospital. He is perfectly fine, makakhale onendoda ekokota engcwabeni.

Me: Nyani Simthandile?

Sim: Sitsho esikrakrayo we are here for you.

She said that pouring herself water. Uyadika sana uSim.

Me: Avbob?

They chuckled. Zuu was looking at me he had a "am sorry" face, I hate people who feel pity for me that kills.

Hlehle: We are here for you.

Me: Zubenathi stop feeling sorry for me. I should be feeling sorry for you I mean you've known him longer than I did.

Zuu: But you still loved him like you've always known him.

Sim: Ndisekhona, am not invisible.

We laughed at her.

Hlehle: Calm down Simmy. Let them argue.

Me: Yakh'okuhle and Simthandile.

Them: Yintoni?

Me: Phandle.

They went out mumbling something but I couldn't care less. I just want to know who shot him and why.

Me: Zubenathi.

Him: Small.

Me: Who shot him and why?

Him: I don't know Small.

He said that looking away.

Me: Look me in my eyes and say that again.

He looks past me and I think I said he must look at me.

Him: I don't know.

Me: Don't you think I deserve to know.

Him: Mbali you don't have to know. Yes you deserve to know but I can't tell you just focus all your attention to him.

Me: Why not focus all my attention to the person who shot him?

Him: What you gonna do? Take a gun shot him? Kill him? What you going to do? If I couldn't protect him as his brother, best friend what are you going to do.

Me: I might as well kill that person.

Him: What do you know about killing.

Me: I'll figure something out.

The door slightly opens.

Sim: Niyangxola aniziva.

I look at her and roll my eyes on the other side Zuu folds his arms and stares into blank space. The doctor came through and said

visiting hours are over. We went home with me and Zuu shouting at each other. I was about to insult him but I kept quiet and focused on the road. Sim parks the car and Zuu jumps of followed by me. He bids good-byes and walk away then it hit me uMakhulu ka Lurra was also home I ran after him.

Me: Uzubenathi!!!

He keeps on walking.

Me: Uzubenathi!!!

He stops but he doesn't look at me, his hands in his pockets. I ran to him.

Me: Look am sorry okay? [He nods] I know it was wrong of me to shout at you this is frustrating, am really sorry you don't have to forgive me but I want you to know am so so sorry.

Why am saying sorry? My mom thought me to always fix my problems and say sorry when am I'm wrong. She also said I must never sleep if I had a fight with a loved one until

we've sort out our differences first and we must put our pride aside. I get it I was wrong but a part of me didn't want to say sorry but if I didn't say sorry I would be disrespecting my late mom.

Him: Look am also sorry. I don't know what got over me I didn't mean to snap at you.

Me: So can you please check on Luncumo's Granny.

Him: Shit!!! Gogo Zobuhle. Look I have to go. He skitters off. I also run back home. I don't feel like sleeping anymore so I just watch TV or TV was watching me. Nosipho & Siphindile walks drunk as hell. They are singing and making nosie.

Siphi: Hey man snatcher.

Nosi: Can't believe she took my Lurra.

Siphi: You have to get your man back Chomiie, you can't let this ugly asshole have him.

Nosi: I won't baby trust me I won't. Nawe you must work your way with Zuu.

Siphi: I will baby they can't have those beautiful man to them selves.

Nosi: Just imagine a man sleeping with this hoe.

Siphi: This cheap hoe like her mom.

Nosi: She must just die like her mom cause she is a useless bitch even her own dad hates her.

I am trying to learn not to accept their stupid comments. I know it's going to be hard but I have to try, I need to block the nosie like Vee said.

Siphi: Watch where you are going pathetic useless hoe.

She smirks and they walk away singing "kumnandi uhlalu udakiwe". I switch off the TV and walk to Hlehle's room I get undercovers and pull her close to me and put my other leg on top of hers. That's my

favorite sleeping position. I am tossing and turning.

Hlehle: Wanna talk about it?

Me: No but can you please sing me a lullaby.

Hlehle: No problem baby ❤️.

She sang a lot of songs for me it took a while for me to fall asleep. I must say she has an angelic voice I wish I could sing.

>>>>3 days later<<<<

Am at the hospital. I woke up early while everyone was sleeping and made them breakfast and left. The doctor walks in. I last saw Lurra the night he was admitted.

Him: Hey am Doctor Zwane.

Me: Nice to meet you.

I am not looking at him am looking at my baby 😭.

Him: You are here early, why?

Me: I miss him I wanted to get here before everyone got here I needed to talk to him on my own. I just needed time alone.

Him: I understand. I will finish up quickly finish so you can spend more time with him. I look up and I see Bhut' Lunga's friend [the one who was starring at me] I get angry.

Me: Lunga sent you. Can't he come here on his own?

Him: What are you talking about?

Me: Am talking about you and Bhut' Lunga telling me to break up with him next thing he is in hospital. You guys think am dumb right?

Him: What? Me and Lunga had nothing to do with this I swear on my grandparent's graves.

Me: You better be telling the truth, nx.

Him: I swear.

Me: Do what you are here to do and get him another Doctor.

Him: I am no-

Me: Do what you are here to do or get out and bring another Doctor.

He does everything he was here to do. He walks out leaving me with Lurra. I look at him for the longest time with tears threatening to come out I close my eyes a little and bite my bottom lip trying to stop the tears from coming. I open my eyes and hold both of his hands.

Me: Luncumo you have to wake up. Do it for me do it for your granny okay baby. I can't lose you I just found you, you have to be strong. I don't I understand why do I keep on losing important people in my life first it was mom now it's you maybe am a curse I'll never know. Promise me you will pull through. Get better soon, I love you.

I quickly wipe my tears and watching sleeping peacefully. He is cute even in these hospital clothes I stand up and walk to the other side I move his arm and make space for me to lay next to him. I lay next to him and lay my head on his arm.

Me: Bendike ndakuxelela uba umhle? I smile.

Me: Futhi uBhabha wakho undibetha amadolo akhefuzele. Andazi noba bendikuxelele or what but uNosipho once stabbed herself cause she said I took her boyfriend poff am not even sure if you guys ever dated. She knew very well that if she stabbed herself her mom is going to take her side and beat me up and she did shem I was even limping. Hee I was going to fight back but I know damn well if I did that I'd be homeless but am not planning on leaving my mother's house they must think again. I was going to beat that ironing board but I can't, I would have fucked her up so bad she won't even recognize herself even the mirror. Who am I lying to I can't even clap imagine me fight. I laugh at my stupid self. I hear him coughing trying to laugh.

Me: Luncumo? He doesn't respond.

Me: Babe can you hear me? Argh that's a dumb question of course you can hear me.

What do doctors do kanene?

I say hitting my head. "Think, think" i say in my head.

Me: Can you please move your hand if you heard me.

He doesn't move a muscle. I lay back on his chest.

Me: Mxm maybe am going crazy am missing your voice to a point where I think you coughed. Stupid me. Yazz I found out that my stepmom was my mom's sister they have the same mom and dad. She got married to her sister's man naye mani uLuzuko uthanda abafazi akafani tuu no Mama uNokuthula. She hated my mom caus she had a crush on my dad she didn't even care that they were married and had two kids she just wanted him for herself, I guess Nosi and her mom are the same. I'd kill you the day you decide

to cheat on me especially with my cousin I'd kill you maybe I'd pour a teaspoon of bleach in your cereal then burry you in your Granny's backyard.

I heard people laugh I looked at the door I saw Kuhle and Zubenathi. We sat there chatting for hours. Hlehle was rushing to work, I was left with Zuu after a little while I decided to go to the bathroom. I did my business and on my way out I had people laugh I looked through the small holes it was a old version of Lurra mhle mani lo Mama. I sat on the toilet sit and took my phone then texted Hlehle.

Me:" Am stuck at the toilet"

Her:"Phi ngoku?"

Me:" I went to the toilet on my way out I had laughs then I saw Lurra's old version"

Her:"Noba ngu makhulu wakhe"

Me:" Hayibo cebisa ndiphume njani"

Her"Make a plan doll"

I wanted to cry so bad then a text came through saying "Phuma uyobana umamazala uyeke" I checked the profile pic and it was Kwanda. I read it and replied " Yakh'okuhle can't shut up" they were teasing me. After hours of sitting I shouted "kanti akahambi umaka Luncumo". The door handle went down lucky me I locked the door.

Mama: What's going on with this toilets. She has a slay Queen voice.

Zuu: The doctors said it doesn't work.

Mama: Where does Luncumo bath?

Zuu: Buza plumber yalapha undiyeke mna. He said that in a bored voice.

Mama: Baby let's go. She said to the man next to her, they hold hands their rings collide. They walk out I unlock the door and walk out. I let out a huge sigh the door opens I quickly get under the bed.

Voice: Uphi? Phuma e' toilet am not Mamazala. That's Kwanda he bangs the toilet door and

opens. I hold my mouth trying to suppress my laughter.

Kwanda: Akekho moss.

I pull Kwanda's leg he runs to Zuu and holds him so tight Zuu laughs I also pulled Hlehle's leg she ran to the door screaming. I got out laughing Kwanda threw his sling bag at me Hlehle sighed.

Me: Agudli indlu ayabaleka amagwala. I was dancing.

We all laughed.

Zuu: He coughed Small.

Kwanda: He laughed. They said at the same time.

Me: Luncumo.

Lurra: Mm.

Zuu: Luncumo Mphati.

Lurra: Mmmm. He said trying to open his eyes.

Hlehle: Vula amehlo Mphati.

Lurra: Mmmm.

Kwanda: Tsek susiqhela vula amehlo.

I kissed him he responded I tried pulling out but he held my head and he sat up straight without breaking the kiss he pulled me to sit on top of him I wrapped my legs around his waist. One of his hands went under my crop top his other hand went to my jean buttons he unbuttoned all 4 of my buttons.

Kwanda: Rhaa uvukile madoda.

I jumped off him and button my jeans. They all laughed. I feel like dying, Sim is also here.

Sim: Uvuka nje senilalana hayi your ancestors are powerful. He even got a boner.

Kuhle: Simthandile. she says in a warning tone.

Me: Hey Sim.

Sim laughed.

Sim: Otherwise bendizogonda uba uvukile or you entered heaven.

She catwalked out. We all laughed.

Lurra: Ngubani lowa?

Me: That's my mom's little sister
Simthandile Jaxa - Mbangatha.

Kwanda: She's royalty?

Hlehle: Something like that.

Lurra: Can you excuse us.

Me: Luncumo you are bleeding.

Hlehle: Am going to call the doctor.

Lurra: This is nothing Bhabha.

Zuu: This fucken blood.

Kuhle came back with Doctor Zwane he did a check up. Lurra kicked them out and made me sit on top of him.

Him: Bhabha were you crying? I nodded no he laughs and looked at me straight in my eyes.

Him: Let me ask again, were you crying?

Me: Something like that.

Him: Bhabha when was the last time you ate?

Me: Uhm tod... he gave me a death stare.

Me: 3 days ago.

Him: Go, home, eat and rest.

Me: But Lu-

Him: I love you.

He kissed me I didn't respond he bit my lower lip and I responded. He took off my top I was left with my bra he pulled it off and sucked my nipples I let out a soft moan he smirks and moves to my neck he leaves a trail of love bites on my neck he does the same thing to my nipples. He gives me my bra and top.

Him: I'll see you tomorrow Bhabha.

Me: Next week.

Him: I'll see you tomorrow, bring me clothes.

I love you.

He pulls me in for a kiss.

Me: I love you too.

I left him.

Luncumo's pov

After Bhabha left Zuu walked in and sat on the couch next to my bed.

Him: What happened?

Me: Lunga happened.

Him: Is he still not over the territory thing?

Me: He told me to stay away from Bhabha apparently he is Bhabha's big brother. I also had Bhabha shouting at Zwane something about them telling her to break up with me.

Him: This has not to do with him being a "big brother" this about the territory. If he has a problem with us ruling he must talk to Godmother.

Me: He wouldn't dare.

Him: Lunga is not gonna run the Xhosa section we run this section.

Me: Nc nc Godmother is so going to kill him.

Langa's pov.

Me: Godmother you called us.

I say bowing down.

Godmother: What's your problem?

Me: Nothing.

Godmother: What happened to Luncumo?

Me: Uhm.....ummm.....

A hot slap landed followed by a few punches I fall on the ground and Godmother beats me up using a walking stick and walks out my friends walk in I see they also got a hiding.

Zwane: I told you not to go after him.

Me: I didn't think Godmother would fuck us over.

Ntando: That's thing you don't think.

Me: Just chill I'll fix everything.

Zwane: Guess who is my patient.

Ntando: I don't have time for your games.

Zwane: Thee one and only Luncumo it's going to be easy to kill him.

Us: He's alive?

Ntando: I thought we killed him.

Me: How long is he staying at hospital?

Zwane: 2 weeks.

Ntando: Long enough kill him and burry him.

We nod in frustration and make our way to club 88. We party and drink all night.

Insert 13



Mbali's pov



I woke up happy today I mean Lurra finally woke up and everything is going alright. Am currently sleeping in the room I used to sleeping in when mom was alive. I take a bath and wear a black skirt, black T - shirt and white sandals. I take my phone, bag and shout "am gone". Sim asked if I needed money for taxi I said no. I first go to Zuu's house. I knock hayibo he can't be sleeping am going to be late for work a slender girl opens this is not Zuu's little sister.

Her: Hey how can I help?

Me: Am looking for my big brother.

Her: Ohh Uzubenathi.

Me: Yes, is he here?

Her: Yeah.

Me: Are you guys dating.

Her: Yeah he's the best boyfriend ever.

I can't believe his cheating on Hlehle on maybe am over reading the situation. What if Hlehle is the side chick. I have to tell her when I get home but it will seem like am trying to break their relationship and I can't afford to lose Kuhle I've grown too attached to her but if I don't I'll also seem like a liar to Hlehle. Fuck what am I gonna do or say.

Me: Okay, can you please call him.

She calls him. He seems shocked to see me here. His jaw slightly drops I don't have time for this.

Him: Uhmm...mmmm....Wha....what brings you here? He asks rubbing the back of his head.

Me: I need keys to Lurra's flat.

Him: Sure.

He goes inside and comes back hands them to me. He calls out to me I stop on my tracks and turn to face him.

Him: Can you please not tell Kuhle.

Me: That would be betraying her trust.

Him: I'll tell her myself.

Me: You have till my shift ends.

Him: When does it end?

Me: 6pm and if you haven't told her I'll tell her myself.

Him: Tha-

Me: Am getting late for my 6am shift.

Him: Bye.

He says with a worried look. I don't know if he is worried about me telling Kuhle or what?

I went to Lurra's flat and took him clothes and locked. I took a taxi to work and I was a little bit late. My shift was taking forever I really wanted to see Lurra. I haven't eaten even though Lurra insisted I ate, I had

coffee and a pie for supper and breakfast? I couldn't eat since I was running late and I also didn't bring lunch at work am stressed food is the last thing on my mind. I hold my head Vuyolwam rushes to me. She's my age she is working cause she's try to help her mom whom is a single parents and has 3 their dad left when her little brother was born, no her father was never home he was the "am busy" type only to find out that he was married to a white woman.

Her: Are you fine?

Me: Yeah am good just a little hungry.

Her: You can have my lunch.

Me: Am good.

Her: I insist.

Me: Enjoy your food am good.

She eats even though she was worried about me.

My shift ended at 6pm. I took a taxi to the hospital. I got to his ward he was talking with

Zuu the moment I walked in they kept looks they were having a serious conversation.

Zuu: Hey.

Ndamkhuphela amehlo. Uthi hey? Manyani?

Hayi uyaqhela lomfana.

Lurra: Bhabha how did you get here it's late you can't be out on your own at this time.

It's dangerous out there, are you trying to lose your life? You know what happens to women and you still walk on your own at this time.

Me: That's not welcoming and I didn't walk here.

Lurra: Whether you walked or not it's still not safe out there Bhabha. You know women get rapped, we watch news everyday and women are always reported dead. Wena you are still brave enough to walk around on your own, you know man walk around looking for their next victim.

I hate being shouted at actually am faint hearted I cry easily. I look at him with teary eyes.

Me: Xolo.

That came out as a whisper am looking down fiddling with my fingers.

Lurra: Yizapha.

I walk to him. He holds my cheeks for a stupid reason my tears fall I try wiping them he moves my hand before it even reaches my face and wipes my tears him self.

Lurra: Sorry I didn't mean to shout at you it's just not safe out there and I don't want you to get hurt Bhabha.

I just nod. He hugs me. Mxxm unuka is'bhedlele and am not happy about that.

Lurra: Xolo vha.

Me: Okay, sorry.

Lurra: You didn't nothing wrong.

Zuu: Ndisekhona guys.

Me: Usekhona? Hee hoo hoo you are funny yazi. Ukhona nantoni? What difference does your presence make? Hayi am not laugh am linganisi.

Lurra laughed we stared at him he stopped laughing.

Lurra: Nixabane?

Me: Ewe.

Zuu: Hayi.

Lurra: Nibangani ke?

Me: He chea-

Zuu: Nothing.

Me: Suthi nothing when you cheated on Hlehle and told me to keep quit. Have you told her?

Zuu: Hayi.

Me: Ulinde kubuye uYesu?

Lurra: Yima he cheated?

Me: Akatshongo? I guess he kept it a secret yimani woah he wanted me to keep it a secret

I guess ndakhatywa esifubeni cause wow.

Hayi andikhuzi guys.

Lurra wanted to laugh but he suppressed his laughter.

Zuu: Look am sorry.

Me: "Look am sorry" apha kum? Uyanya okanye uphambene cause I don't qond you.

Lurra: Hayi une"angry Bhabha.

Me: Ha.a uxelela umntu owrongo.

Lurra: Ziphi impahla?

Me: Don't dismiss the topic. I say handing him his clothes he stands up and heads to the bathroom.

I looked at Zuu for the longest time and decided to talk.

Me: Umxelela nini uYakh'okuhle?

Zuu: Nzomxelela pholas.

Me: Can't believe you just pholased me, nzakukhaba unye mna.

Lurra came out of the bathroom laughing.

Me: Nyani Luncumo? Futhi where is your hospital outfit.

Lurra: I discharged myself.

Me: Hayibo njani? You are not a doctor.

Lurra: Subuza masambe.

Me: You can't go you still fragile.

Lurra: Ndiyiva apha kuwe leyo.

Me: Ndiyagowa on behalf of Hlehle nawe uyandiphambanela ufuna ndiphambane?

Lurra: Ha.a Bhabha.

Me: Ufuna undibona ndiyichommie ka patjutju? Uzokonwaba xa undibona ndihleli no patjutju?

They laughed they didn't understand how serious I am.

Me: Niyanyuba kumnandi?

Zuu: Sibadala.

Me: U'cheat.ile ke wena andazi uthetha uthini.

Lurra: Okwad.

He said walking out I followed him. The doctor didn't want to let him go he had to stay a week or two it was a female doctor. Lurra laughed and said "there are people who need that bed more than I do. They need your attention more than I do. They need you to save their lives like you saved mine [sigh] ndimnkile ngalomazwi" the doctor agreed to let him go. Zuu left saying he is going to see Hlehle and we went to Lurra's flat. He opened the door I held my head I had a bad headache, my body was really weak and my vision got blur. Lurra picked me up and made me rest on the bed. He took my shoes and covered me in a blanket.

Him: U'right Bhabha? He asked in a concerned tone am not about to tell him I didn't eat I was just worried.

Me: Yeah.

Him: Mbaliyothando.

Me: Luncumo.

Him: U'right?

Me: Ewe, I think ndiphethwe yintloko.

Him: Awusiva isiXhosa mnt'wam?

Me: Ndiyasiva babe.

Him: Ha.a awusiva inoba uva isingesi so ndizobuza ngaso. Utheni?

He looked at me straight in my eyes. I looked down he lifted my head up our eyes meet.

Him: Xoka menemene lam imameli indoda yakho, uthi kutheni?

Me: Am fi- okay I had coffee and a pie for supper and I didn't eat the entire day plus the three day you were in hospital I only drank water.

Him: The dark circles around your eyes? What? I have dark circles arghh I didn't notice I don't even bother looking at the mirror cause Noks once said "Am ugly I shouldn't even bother looking at the mirror" she always had something nasty to say ever since mom passed away I lost my confidence

but my brothers are trying to help me get it back.

Me: Uhm I haven't been sleeping lately.

Him: Why?

Me: I spend most of my time overthinking, crying about my mom, thinking if my dad really loves me, wondering if my dad had something to do with my mom's death and wondering if what we have is real.

Him: Overthinking ruins a lot of things. You always think the worst you always have those "what ifs" in your head don't doubt what people feel for you stop thinking everyone is here to get hurt you some of us are here to love and protect you. Stop focusing on the worst start focusing on what make you matters and makes you happy. Bhabha stop creating the worst scenarios in your head not everything you create in your mind is real wena you are just trying to find mistakes where there are no mistakes. Bhabha am sure

your overthinking has ruined a lot of relationships with your loved ones but you didn't even notice cause you were too busy creating more scenarios in your head sometimes you end up believing they are real but they aren't but because your imagination played mind tricks with you, you end up distancing yourself from that person or changing your attitude towards them. That's wrong Bhabha let people come and go in your life don't lock them out they are here to teach you different lessons open up to people don't think the worst about them, I hope you heard me.

Me: Besingathethi ngokutya?

Him: Undivile moss.

Me: Ewe can I go home?

Him: Not now maybe at 9pm.

Me: I can't take advantage of Sim's kindness I have to show her respect and how greatfull I am for her kindness not everyone is ever

kind to me I should show appreciation to those who are kind towards me.

Him: Bhabha!!

Me: Yintoni?

Him: Overthinking.

Me: Sorry.

He stood up and walked out after 30 - 40 minutes he came back with 4 kotas and 2 1lt cokes. He put the food in front of me.

Me: Luncumo the doctor said you have to eat liquid food not solid food.

Him: It's a good thing you still remember I can't eat solid food. Since I can't eat solid food and you can, you are going to eat for me and you, while I sip on my 1lt coke.

Me: Am full.

No am not full overthinking makes me full.

Stress makes me full. Crying makes me full.

Anger makes full.

Him: Khawutye full petrol.

Me: Full petrol?. I ask laughing.

Him: Yitya uyeke ubuza into ezingekhoyo.

Me: Hayibo nguwe othe ndiyi full petrol futhi andilambanga.

Him: Ufuna ulamba ngenkani?

Me: By fire by force?

He laughs. Arghh I missed that smile.

Him: Lomzuzu sisavane yitya.

Me: Njani cause am not hungry.

Him: Your are hungry and stress is not hungry note the difference. Some people want food and here you are saying you don't want to eat. Appreciate what you have cause others don't have it they really want while you are playing with it.

Me: Motivate me mnt'wam.

He chuckled.

Him: What am trying to say appreciate the person who puts food on the table and appreciate what you get and understand if you didn't get what you have. In your

appreciation process please appreciate me and my efforts.

Me: I appreciate you and your efforts kodwa ayidibanenga nakutya le uthetheya it has something to do with how you grew up.

Him: Yitya Mbaliyothando if you still want to talk to me.

I mumbled "mxm" and ate my kotas while he ate plain yogurt and "sipped on his coke" [rolling my eyes] he kept on stealing glances at me until I finished eating. He came close to me and caressed my cheeks there's something about this boy's touch ha.a uduru umgidi this man's touch sounds even better. He pushes the Kota plastics aside and leaned in for a kiss then removed the blankets from me.

Me: Luncumo your wound. I said in between the kiss.

Him: It's just a little scar don't worry babe.

He gets on top of me and kisses my neck. As he is doing that I let out a unusual sound he smirks and pulls my top off then leave love bites [hickeys] in my neck and my breasts this feels good. Then I starting feeling like a bitch as soon as he pulled my skirt up my breast I didn't really want him to stop but the fact that am acting like a bitch now makes me think of stopping him. He takes my bra off he sucks my nipples I let out the sound again and I feel something happen in between my legs. Losing my virginity to him ain't a problem but the fact that I just started dating him and I already felt comfortable enough to show my "ugly" body which he defined as beautiful that made me feel like a cheap hoe. I take off his top he is flinching in pain from the wound but he doesn't seem to care and his top was stained with dried blood. He stops and holds his

stomach I panic and turn him around so he can sit.

Me: Does it hurt?

Him: A little bit. He says in husky voice.

I stand up and fetch his meds from my bag. I take warm water and clean his wound put on a clean bandage. He wanted to pour sky vodka or something on his wound cause he believed it was going to burn his wound and he would feel better he even said "ifana ne spirit lento Bhabha". I wear my clothes and get him a clean T - shirt and he offered me his hoodie mmmm it smells like him. I took my phone and texted Sim saying "Am on my way and am sorry for coming back later it's just that Lurra released him self from the hospital plus I also left work late." Am shaking guys as I write the text am truly scared what if she gets angry and beats me up. Luncumo is hugging me from behind and my stupid ass is shaking and sweating of course am

overthinking I have a lot of what ifs in my head right now he stops causing me to stop.

Him: Stop overthinking your aunt is cool am sure she won't be angry.

Me: Am not overthinking am just am sca-

Him: You are overthinking everything is going to be fine and I told you to stop overthinking.

Me: I'll stop I promise.

Him: Bhabha.

Me: Babe.

Him: Compliment someone's beauty without doubting/questioning your own beauty.

Arghh madoda u' clever namhlanje mnt'wam.

It's nice spending time with him he kept on grabbing my ass and grinding his dick on my "flat board ass" so they say everytime he did that and I let them "mmm" or "aah" sound and he'd say "stop moaning you are turning me on". He gave me 4 ps chocolates written

"I love you" we were now standing at the corner.

Him: Ndiyakuthanda vhaa. The way he said that sent shivers down my spine on my stomach? I swear I felt a whole fucken zoo I blushed shyly.

Me: I love you too.

Him: Ngesingesi Bhabha?

Me: Ewe rhaaa bufuna ndithini?

Him: Ubengenotsho ngesiXhosa?

Me: Mxm uyaqhela moss. What happened to "appreciate what you get"?

We both laughed.

Him: You can't use that against me.

Me: I can't and I just did.

We laugh and have a little chat and shared a kiss before getting home.

When I got home my Sim was Titanic drinking black coffee. Hayi makuyekwe mzi let's not watch the movie if we are going to drink black strong coffee instead of eating

ice cream or popcorn. I walk to the sitting room shaking. Am truly scared way too scared.

Her: Don't worry baby I understand you want to spend time more time with your boyfriend and I got your message thanks for your respect lastly stopping thinking am like Nokuthula let's get back to our old selves. Sim and Yoyo [my nickname] the best friends forever.

Me: Goodnight girlfriend.

Her: Ndumi and her family are coming to see you.

Yey Auntie Ndumi is coming and she is coming with Liyakha[her son] and Siyakha [her daughter] they aren't twins am so happy I love those kids.

I walk to Hlehle's room she is sleeping peacefully next to her there's Kwanda ulala I"shit lamfana. I peek their foreheads and head to sleep I slept with clothes on.

Am woken up by Hlehle screaming.

Her: Ndagowa bahlali.

Me: You normal mzi?

Kwanda: Uyagowa chomiie.

Me: Wagowa ngo lam silele theni uphambene?

Hlehle: Niphi uZuu elala no Siphindile?

I knew the girl looked familiar but I was in a hurry I didn't pay attention.

Kwanda: Besicela nje ulala thina cause we ain't gowing, gowa on your own and let us sleep.

I know it's not funny kodwa the way Hlehle keeps on screaming "Am gowing bahlali"

"ramaphosa where are you ndityelwa"

"Nosipho ndamkhaba anye la Siphindile atsho ngobubi ngathi une'hickups" or "Hee bane

brave yazz bandithumelela i'sex tape yabo"

she keeps on screaming those same lines over again.

Her: Ndithi bane brave yazz bandithumelela i'sex tape yabo.

Sim barges in. Kwanda mouths "uyagowa".

Sim: Gowa mzi am behind you all the way.

Her: Hee yazi wena Simthandile mntaka makhulu no Tamkhulu am say ichommie ka Nosipho slept with my boyfriend I mean she ncwinad for him. *OMG* I can't even speak proper English mntaka Grandpa.

She was crying guys that broke my heart.

Sim: Talk what you say.

Uphilile guys uSimthandile?

Kwanda: Nyani sim card?

I laughed Kuhle joined in.

Her: Simmy nomdade they violated my rights.

Simmy they nyashed amalungelo amu. Guys can't I file a lawsuit? Bendicela oku kwe 5 months yam back.

Kwanda: 5 yonke mzi? Uyakunyela chommie.

Me: Nigowa nonke? Mna guys I can't join the gowing group I really need some rest.

Sim: Ha.a gowa nawe mzi. One of us gowas we all gowa.

Hlehle: Don't gowa mntase kuyanyiwa kwa gowing department.

She's crying even harder.

Her: 5 months yonke lo'swine? A whole fucken 5 months. Hayi God get me a special room in prison cause wow ndithi wow people, are y'all heard me? Guys what did I do wrong cause khange silwe what happened? Am I that ugly? Why did Uzubenathi Solani cheat on me? With my ex friend nalapha ebantwini he ain't feeling me Mbaliyothando tuu.

Uyanya nje qhaa then he sends their sex tape. Hayi masivalwe isdyolo cause wow man are trash. Men are dogs.

Me: Not bonke kaloku.

Sim: Bophelela inja yakho mntase uziyeke ezuthi zi"right.

Kwanda: Uzothini kengoku?

Her: I don't know [sigh] am breaking up with him.

Me&Kwanda: This means we can sleep?

Her: Yeah.

She is crying making it hard for me, Sim and Kay to sleep. She keeps on saying "ndatywelwa nathula".

-
.

Lunga's pov.

Zwane is working "late" so he can finish up our plan. He is going to check on our patient last time Zwane saw him he was unconscious this means everything will be easy. He'll inject something in his drip and that will be the end of it. Small? I will deal with her later no she must suck it and forget about him.

She is too perfect for him "ntliziyo ndise" my left foot and he doesn't deserve her. She deserves someone who will love her and he must shower her with love and money, how can you be happy when you are in relationship

with someone who doesn't have money.

Zwane calls I put it on loud speaker.

Ntando: Is it done?

Zwane: He is not here.

Me: What?

Zwane: He discharged himself.

Ntando: I thought he was unconscious.

Zwane: I also thought so apparently he woke up yesterday and discharged today at 7:30pm - 08:00pm.

Me: Fuck Godmother is going to kill us.

Ntando: I have regret being friends with you right now.

I drop the call. Fuck what did we do? He's not selfish he won't let Godmother kill me. Am Mbali's big brother he wouldn't let any harm happen to me but I also shot without considering that he is Bhabha's boyfriend at this rate anything is possible. I pray he considers that am Mbali's brother. I know he won't let anything happen to me he can't

afford to see Mbali crying I guess having her in my corner will be really helpful.

Insert 14



Mbali's pov.



Hlehle was crying the entire night and my alarm will wake me up in a hour and we are up shushing her. Sim suggested I sleep but with this sobbing lady next me its going to be very I really need this one hour sleep. I finally close my eyes and the alarm rings, I snooze it and get back to sleep. 30 min later I woke up took a bath and brushed my teeth I get back to my room mhh my bed is nicely made. I quickly get dressed Mam' Lindiwe is gone

shout at me am so late. I walk to the kitchen,
Hlehle is dressed ready for work.

Me: You stopped gowing mzi?

Hlehle: Not really and am sorry you couldn't
sleep.

Me: No problem.

Her: Can I make you breakfast?

Me: That would be great.

Her: Bread, eggs, russian, vienna, cheese,
tom-

Me: Yeah whatever just make food.

She giggled.

Me: So what are you going to do with Zuu.

Her: We are breaking up mntase. Uyandinyela
kaloku.

- He is shitting on me.

Sim appeared from the passage.

Sim: Girl power!!!

Me: Hayi Simthandile.

Sim: I promote break ups ndingu Facebook.

- Am Facebook.

Me: Simthandile khula.

- Grow up.

Kay: Good morning bitches.

Sim: Hey hoe.

Me: Ungumzali Sim?

- Are you a parent sim?

Sim: Badala abam abantwana.

- my kids are old.

Kay: Ngumzali o'right uSim.

- She is a good parent.

Sim: Hlehle how are you feeling?

Hlehle: Am good. I don't know what to do I really want to confront him.

Me: You know a teaspoon of bleach will sort everything.

Sim: You are growing bitch.

Kay: Bad influence.

Hlehle: Am really considering that bleach thing.

Me: Bendidlala.

- I was playing.

Sim: Fana nabanye abantwana uyeke ubangungwele ngcwele somandla.

- Be like other kids and stop being holier than thou.

Me: Bye Sim.

Kay: Asibonakali?

- Are we invisible?

Me: B-

My phone rang it was Vuyolwam I answered it.

Her: You are late.

Me: Sorry can you cover up for me.

Her: But you will pay me.

Me: It's a deal.

We took a taxi to town. Mam' Lindiwe scolded me I got teary then she said sorry. I hate Fridays especially month end Fridays people are coming in and out am so annoyed it's tiring. As we were going to eat Lunch some guy called us.

Me: Hey. I said rolling my eyes.

Lwam: Be nice Tee.

Me: Am hungry, tired, annoyed and sleepy. I didn't sleep the entire night cause my sister's boyfriend decided to cheat and my alarm rang when I was about to get some sleep.

Lwam: Sorry. Bhuti how can I help you?

Him: The necklace.

Me&Lwam: Necklace?

Him: The necklace you are wearing looks exactly like the one I got from my grandparents.

I was wearing a necklace I got from mom it was made for me and my late brother.

Me: I got this from my mom it was custom made for me and my late brother.

Lwam: Later brother?

Me: Bhuti you can order from her.

Then 2 guys came to us.

Guy2: Senzo we've been waiting for you.

Him: The necklace.

Guy1: What about it?

Him: They look the same.

Guy1: I thought it was custom made.

Me: Mine was custom made for me by my late mom it was for me and my late brother.

Him: Ok.

Lwam: Order.

Me: Fuck our lunch is already over.

They ordered and left. Mam Lindi came to us ndiyamthanda ke lomfazi.

Lindi: Ngabani aba?

- Who are they?

Me: Asibazi.

- We don't know them.

Lindi: Smbwl ke lo ofike kuqala.

We burst out laughing.

Lwam: Ha.a Lindi.

Lindi: Don't judge me ntombi. The guys are hot am sure you yourself want him.

Lwam: Hayibo Lindi awuthethi ngami.

- You are not talking about me.

Lindi: Mbali what do you think about them?

Me: Sis Lee I have my own pelepele hot boyfriend.

Lindi: That boy is hotter than my own husband.

We laughed at her she is so funny. Baninzi oSim I actually love Sis Lee she is the best. We worked with Sis Lee talking about those 3 guys from earlier especially the necklace guy. Lindi left and asked us to lock up for her we were now sweeping the floor.

Lwam: Remember you owe me.

Me: Yeah.

Her: Can you please give me your shifts for next week I really need the money for my mom's meds and my little brother's school trip and I al-

Me: You can have them baby.

Her: Thank you so so much.

Me: The pleasure is mine.

Yay!!! I have a week off but it's such a pity that she has to over work herself to get money to provide for her family I wish her mom gets better. She such a sweet beautiful dark skinned girl and her afro is on fire. She is hot I just love her. We finish cleaning and take our bags.

Me: Bye dark beauty.

She giggled.

Her: Bye. I love you. Thank you for boosting myself Confidence.

She said hugging me then she planted a kiss on my forehead I giggled. We always talk about work related stuff but today she actually kissed and hugged me thats the first.

Me: I love you too baby.

We stood there waiting for a taxi. Her phone rang and she took out.

Her: hello.

Caller: xxxxxxxxxx.

Her: This is her.

Caller:xxxxxxxxx.

Her: I'll let her know her.

Caller: xxxxxxxxxxx.

Her: Have a nice day.

She hung up.

Me: What was that formality all about?

Her: My dad's PA called saying dad wants to see us.

Me: Tell me how it goes.

Her: Will do.

We took different ways I went home found Kay cooking, Sim talking, Noks mopping the floor and Hlehle was starrng into blank space. I feel sorry for Noks and Nosi I mean Sim turned them into slaves.

Me: Babies.

Them: Mommy.

Me: Where on Earth is Ndumi?

Sim: They are almost here baby.

Me: Can't wait I miss Siyakha and Liyakha.

Sim: Ohh and the builders are coming.

Me: That's amazing.

Sim: So Wawa[Kwanda] will decorate your room since he is doing interior things.

Kay: Interior design Sim card.

Sim: Whatever crap it is.

Me: Let me check up Luncumo.

Kay: Whose that?

Sim: Condoms are free.

Me: Simthandile!!!

I shouted Hlehle jumped I think that brought her back from her imaginary world.

Hlehle: What were you talking about.

Sim: Protected sex but I want my husband raw.

Kay laughed I just stared at her.

Me: Worse sendimithi kunya.

- Am already pregnant.

Kay: Am going to be an aunt.

We all turned and looked at looked at him.

Kay: Yinto? Am going to be an aunt.

- What?

Hlehle: Umithi? Uzithwele? Ukhulelwe? You pregnant?

Sim and Kay were happy and Hlehle was shocked. I laughed at them.

Me: Ndiyadlala good people.

- Am playing.

Me: Let me change so I can check on my patient.

I walked to my room changed into Lurra's Nike tracksuit and went to the kitchen to make food for me and Hlehle she needs to eat. As we were chatting Nosi walks in with Siphi. Hlehle grabbed the mop and beat Siphi up then pulled her with her wig. Sim was laughing.

Me: Nqanda Sim.

- Stop them.

Sim: Bayeke bakhuphane inkani. Betha Kuhle.

- Let them fight. Beat her Kuhle.

She says taking a bite from Kuhle's sandwich.

Kay: Khaba lonto imbi.

- Kick that ugly thing.

That gave Hlehle more power she tripped Siphi and she fell Hlehle threw punches then she grabbed a pan I jumped off the high stool.

Sim: Better sit down if you know what's good for you.

I sat down Nosi tried separating them.

Sim: Jump on her Kay.

Kay jumped on Nosipho. I carried on making food Hlehle slammed the pan on Siphi's head and pulled off her wig. Damn that girls a mess.

Sim: Rhaa kanti zinje inwele.

- Your hair is like this.

She said that laughing. Kay sat on top of Nosi threw punches Nosi kicked Kay at the back of his head Kay jumped up and down on her tummy on the other side Siphi was slapping

Kuhle and Hlehle was hitting her with her elbow on her face I ate my food as fast as I could then took my phone and went out. On my way I saw Lurra walking with his friends.

Guy1: Aww sshalaphala.

I looked at the guy for the longest time.

Guy2: Whuu akamhle ndicela i'number.

Me: Cella ku Tar Lurra.

He turned around when he saw me he smiled and came to me.

Me: Uncuma nabani?

- Who are you smiling with?

Him: Ndicuma nawe.

- Am smiling with you.

Me: Andincumi nawe ke mna.

- Am not laughing with you.

Him: Uxabene mnt'wam?

- Are you fighting?

Me: Luncumo uyagula and you walking around the streets and am busy worrying about you health.

- You are sick.....

Guy: Sulwa naye Bhabha.

- Don't fight with him.

Me: Bhabha?

Guy: Kanti awungo Bhabha.

- Aren't you Bhabha.

Lurra: Nguye mjita. Jonga nzoniboni pha late.

- Its her. I'll see you later

Me: Akazi uzobe e'busy.

- He's not coming he will be busy.

Them: Sure.

We walked to his house no words exchanged he tried talking to me a few times but I didn't answer him. We got his flat I threw myself on the couch he sat next to me and smiled I clicked my tongue.

Him: Baby.

Me: Luncumo.

Him: Undiqumbele.

- Are you mad at me?

Me: Benditshilo?

- Did I say so?

Him: Sundiphoxa babe.

Me: Luncumo you were shot and you might get a bloody infection.

Him: Sukulwa baby. Jonga uxolo mnt'wam.

Me: Mxm.

Him: Undiqumbele.

Me: Ewe Luncumo Mphati.

He came close and kissed me I responded am so angry at him right now but his touch makes me feel weak really weak my body always betrays me I love how he touches me. He runs his hands through my body he reaches my ass and pulls me to sit on top of him. He pulls out then looks at me.

Him: Still mad at me?

Me: No.

--

Kuhle's pov.

After Nana left we fought till there was blood everywhere. Simmy stopped us then called the ambulance there were broken mugs, plates and glasses then Nosi & Sipi were rushed to the hospital we beat them with forks, knives, pans, plates, glasses, mugs and chairs the house is a mess. I went to my room took a cold bath then went to the shop I bought bleach and poison went to Zuu's house. I knocked he came to open then he hugged me.

Me: Hy babe.

Him: You came after everything I did.

Me: I did babe.

Him: Come in.

I walk in he was tipsy and dirty even the room was dirty. I ran him a bath and cleaned the room I also made him food. He came out of the bathroom looking hot as hell I felt sorry for him I finished cooking and dished up for us. We ate after I made coffe poured

a teaspoon of bleach and a little poison then gave it to him he drank it he was saying sorry the entire time.

Me: What if I poisoned you?

He laughed.

Him: You wouldn't dare.

We laughed about it. He went to bed and slept I took his phone called the ambulance they said they will be here in a hour I wiped my finger prints washed my cup and plate then took my stuff and went home. I found Ndumi and Sim chatting I went to sit with them.

Me: Afternoon family.

Them: Baby.

Me: Ninjani?

Ndumi: Am good.

Me: Baphi abantwana?

Sim: Abatipanga?

Ndumi: Ba"out.

Then Nana walked in she threw herself on Ndumi and held her so tight Ndumi was running out of breath then a call came through.

Me: Hello.

Caller: Am I talking to Kuhle?

Me: Yes, how can I help you?

Caller: I was calling to let you know Mr Solani is hospital.

Me: Thank you.

The call was dropped I smiled widely then starting humming a tune.

Sim: Wavuya wedwa sikhona?

- Why are you happy alone while we are here?

Me: Uzubenathi is in hospital.

Nana: Yintoni emnandi apho?

- What's nice in that?

Me: Ayikho.

- Nothing.

Sim: Andiyazi uba ninamashwa or i' boyfriend zenu zenimashwa cause wow niyazihamba izibhedlele.

- I don't know if you two have bad lucks or your boyfriends have bad lucks cause wow you guys are in and out of hospitals.

We laughed our asses out Kwanda walked carrying bags from liquor store.

Sim: You got the alcohol?

Wanda: Yeah.

Sim: The weed?

Us: Weed?

Sim: You heard me.

Nana: Simthandile what's wrong with you?

Sim: I have an announcement to make.

Me: Let's get the weed.

We all stood up and changed into our PJ and went to buy weed in Thera's shack we bought 6 bags then I saw Lurra but he didn't. We went back home found Sim eating.

Kay: We back bitches.

Sim: Nana let's take this to your room.

We went to her room.

Sim: So am getting married again.

Kay: To who.

Sim: Some random guy.

Ndumi: Where is your husband?

Sim: Ndishiyiwe chom.

Kay: Wavuma nawe friend?

Sim: I had no control over the situation.

Me: Bleach and poison might work I mean
look arts Zuu.

They all coughed and looked at me.

Me: What I did nothing wrong.

Nana: A teaspoon of bleach and poison?

I nodded whilst sipping on Belgravia. Nana
puffed on her joint.

Sim: Leadership baby.

Kay: Let's toast to that.

We did a toast.

Nana: Lead us we are your people.

Ndumi: Girl power!!! She screamed.

Sim: So me and my husband are having a traditional wedding and I need bridesmaids and a maid of honor.

Kay: We are happy I need to get me a dress.

Sim: I need 4 bridesmaids and one maid of honor.

Nana: I know someone.

Ndumi: Give us the name.

Nana: Vuyolwam.

Wanda: What you waiting for bitch?

Nana: Let me call her.

She stood up and called her.

--

Vuyolwam's pov.

Am Vuyolwam Venfolo am 17 years doing grade 12 I live with my mom in a 4 room house and my 3 siblings [Sinalo 14 girl, Sinethamba 10 girl and Ayabonga 8 boy]. My dad is married to a white woman and they have 3 kids they are all that matters to him.

He called saying he wants to meet us we were now in front of his big office. We went in and sat down.

Him: Good afternoon.

Me: Mr Mbebe.

Him: Sit down.

We all sat down.

Him: How are you?

Me: Get to the point Mr Mbebe.

Him: I need you to move out of my house.

Mom: Uyanxila that's my mom's house.

Me: Besides it's on mom's name.

Him: I need it.

Me: And we don't? It's a Venfolo family house.

Him: I need it for my business.

Mom: Do we look like we care?

Him: Well you were married to me and I own 50% of the house.

Sine: Unxilele Mbebe?

- Are you drunk.

Him: Miss Venfolo hold your dogs.

I laughed he always hated us from day one he took everything we had.

Me: Mom has 50% of that house you can't kick us out there has to be a rule against that.

Sine: Besides it's mom's inheritance.

He chuckled.

Him: If you want that house buy it.

Me: How much?

Him: 70k.

Mom: Are you losing your mind?

Him: No Amanda.

Sine: Where on Earth are we suppose to get such money.

Him: You have one week.

He stood up and went to open the door for us we went out so so sad. We got home I prepared supper we ate then went to bath when I was about to wear my Pj top my phone rang it was Tee[Mbali] I answered.

Her: Hey can you come over to my house?

Me: What? Why?

Her: My aunt is getting married and she needs a bridesmaid.

Me: Am in baby.

I was so happy I've never been a bridesmaid before and I get to be a bridesmaid for a stranger.

Her: It's a PJ party type of thing.

Me: Am coming.

Her: And you are sleeping over.

Me: Am on my way.

I got dressed in my PJs and informed my mom. Tee & her aunt insisted on fetching me. Tee's house is amazing a 12 roomed house and has a shack at the back we went to Tee's room it reeked of alcohol and weed. They were high and laughing. I sat down it was actually nice drinking and smoking with them. They introduce themselves as Yakh'okuhle, Kwanda, Simthandile and Ndumi.

Kuhle: So my boyfriend cheated and I poisoned him. I asked him what if I poisoned him he said " You wouldn't dare" omg I can't believe I did, him and his bitch are in hospital.

We all burst out laughing.

Tee: My boyfriend got shot and he was rushed to the hospital then he discharged himself we went to his house and he kissed me then his wound hurt him I was half naked my Bluetooth was ready to pair.

She said crying we laughed at her.

I enjoyed the rest of my night with them.

Thandile is cool extra cool.

Insert 15



Mbali's pov



I was woken up by a knock a really strong knock everyone was sleeping on the floor there were bottles everywhere. I really wanted to cry the door opened Liya opened peeped his head and waved hello I slowly nod. My head is spinning like crazy I can't believe my first time drinking it would be with my aunts.

Liya: There are guys looking for Aunt Thandi.

Me: Wake her up.

I said adjusting myself into a proper sleeping position. I lay my head on the cold floor.

Liya: Aunt Thandi wake up.

Sim: What do you want?

Liya: There are building guys looking for you.

Sim: Tell them am coming.

Liya: Now aunt Thandi.

She stood up and screamed "WAKE UP BITCHES" then walked out everyone woke up and looked around like their were lost then we all laid our head and the floor and drifted off to sleep.

I was woken up by someone jumping up and down on me. I slowly opened my eyes only to find Siya he sat on my belly and slapped my face.

Me: What?

Him: Wake up.

Me: What did you lose?

Him: I missed you and you are taking me out for ice cream

Me: Now?

Him: Yes bitch now.

Me: What?

Him: Just lift your stupid ass up and walk to the bathroom then take a bath I'll make your stupid bed.

Me: How old are you and where is my sweet Siya?

Him: Just wake up Thando.

Me: Fine am up.

I stood up went to the bathroom took a cold long bath. I came out and damn I was ugly ASF. Siya made my bed then Lwam was picking up the bottles I wore warm clothes and flops then tied my afro I really need to braid my hair. I went to the kitchen Sim was making coffee for all of us.

Sim: You look like shit.

Me: I feel like shit.

They laughed. Lungi was sleeping on the counter.

Kay: Those building guys are making noise.

Lwam: Damn I'm never drinking ever again.

We laughed.

Me: The weed hit the spot.

Ndumi: Sim has always been a badass.

Hlehle: Am going to see Zuu.

Me: For reals.

Hlehle: I need to see how the poison worked.

Sim: Hlehle for deputy president.

Me: I don't trust you so am coming with you.

Siya walked in he was holding Rainbow Barbie that's my favorite doll.

Him: My ice cream.

Me: This is more important.

He frowned and folded his arms with tears threatening to come out.

Me: Mxxm. Wait for me at the TV room.

Kay: Am going home.

Sim: Me & Ndumi are going dress shopping.

Lwam: Am going to look for a place to rent.

Me: Seems like am going on a ice cream date even if it's cold.

Ndumi: Buy him a bunny chow.

Me: I don't have money sthandwa.

I ate finish and went to fetch Siya. We walked around viewing the place I grew in then went to buy him a bunny chow and ice

cream. We went to the park we sat on the benches he told me how much he enjoys being with Grandma I really miss that soul I think I'll visit her sometime. He ran to play on the swings.

Him: Come push me.

Me: Please say please.

Him: Can you please push me.

Me: Am coming.

I went to him and pushed him.

Me: How about we go to the mall?

Him: That's great. You'll buy me McDonald's and that toy thingy?

Me: Yes. Let's go home and fetch my card then we are good to go.

Him: Let's hurry up.

He jumped off and pulled me he was actually leading the way he was super excited. We got home and took my card we also took Liya & Lwam with us. Lwam went to with draw money and went grocery shopping we went to buy a

few clothes for me. After clothes shopping we went to McDonald's.

Me: So how is Grandpa?

Siya: Grandpa is very sick and he said his dying wish it's to see you.

Liya: So dad suggested we come look for you.

Me: Grandpa wants to see me?

Siya: Yeah that's what he asks for each every day.

Me: Wow.

Siya: Sometimes he prays he even cry's he always wondered if you were fine. He asked the Lord to keep you safe everyday he even said " Even it's one minute of seeing her I would be happy. Lord bring her back safe I wish to see her before I die". He always wished you returned back home but he didn't have the resources to find you.

Me: I didn't know Grandpa loved me this much.

Siya: He really loves you. Grandpa prays for the entire family but he spends half of his time praying for you.

Me: When is your mom going to see him?

Siya: Well I overheard her & dad saying after they what you have to say about visiting Grandpa.

Me: I think I want to see him.

Siya: You think?

Me: Yeah.

We keep on eating then I look around Liya is not here.

Me: Siya where is Liya?

Siya: Right ne- she's gone.

We both stand up and scan the room.

Voice: I think you are looking for her.

The voice is familiar it's the guy from yesterday holding Liya and she is chilled eating candy floss.

Me: Ohh necklace guy.

Him: Hey young lady.

Me: Baby let's go. Thank you Mr.

Him: Pleasure is all mine.

I take Liya and we take our bags and took a taxi back home. We walked in the door was locked I took my spare key and opened. Since I was bored I decided to cook for the building guys I cooked rice, chicken and cabbage and dished up for them. Liya and Siya were sleeping on the couch I picked them up and took them to my room. While they were sleeping I cleaned the house and packed my bags I need to see my Grandpa. Then my phone rang.

Me: Talk or forever hold your peace.

I say in an annoyed tone.

Caller: Senqumbe Bhabha.

Mxmm ngu Lurra.

Me: Ohh hey babe.

Him: Celupheme.

Me: Ndi'busy.

Him: Ndingene?

Me: Am babysitting Lurra.

Him: Yiza naye.

Me: Uphambene?

Him: Yiza naye Bhabha.

Me: Ndiyeza.

I stood up and went to my room I can't trust strangers with the kids I woke Liya up first then woke Siya up.

Me: Am going out.

Siya: I don't really care.

Me: If anything happens you call this number. I say showing him Lurra's number.

Siya: Am hungry.

Me: I'll make you something quick before I go.

We went to the kitchen and I made them food.

Liya: Who you going out with?

Me: My friend.

Liya: Can we see her?

Me: No you can't baby.

Then my phone rang Liya answered it so fast then she ran out we followed her only to find her hugging Tar Lurra.

Me: Liya ulambile?

Liya: Bendithe ndilambile okanye nguSiya olambileyo?

Tar Lurra laughed.

Me: Siya masambe.

I made Siya's food I left him eating Liya wanted to come with us but she can't not now. We walked taking videos, pictures and chasing each other it was actually fun. We stopped at Mam' Dee's shop and bought braaid meat then went to sit down.

Me: Luncumo.

Him: Full name ndenzeni mnt'wam?

Me: Suzicengela awenzanganto or ikhona into oyenzileyo?

Him: Nope.

Me: Well I was thinking of vis-

Him: Visiting your grandpa your cousin told me. It's his dying wish Bhabha you have to see him and I suggest you go today since you already packed.

Me: Uhm thank you.

Him: For?

Me: For understanding babe.

Him: Pleasure. Eat your food.

Me: Uhm I ate.

Him: Phinda utye Bhabha.

Me: Hayibo Andilambanga.

Him: I'll feed you myself.

Me: Am full.

Him: You chose.

He feed me and he made sure I swallowed hayibo is this how my life is going to be? I ended up finishing the food on my own he was drinking fanta orange. I spend the whole day with him later I went home and Ndumi was packing my bag at the back of her car. I hugged Sim and Hlehle then climbed on the

car. This is going to be one tiring drive but I have to see my mom's dad. Ndumi drives like a tortoise Siya & Liya fell asleep I eventually fell asleep. Someone shook me I opened my eyes it was morning already.

Me: Mmm.

Ndumi: We are in Jamestown, wanna pee?
I laughed at her.

Me: Yeah I also need a few snacks. After Jamestown it's Queenstown?

Ndumi: Yeah, are you excited?

Me: Am nervous.

Ndumi: Liya you going with Mbalz.

Liya: Sure but get me food.

Ndumi: Will do.

We took our separate ways. We went to the bathroom did our business and headed out.

We were all sleepy especially Ndumi cause she was up all night. We got to the car and off we went uyabhora uNdumi no screaming no shouting. We finally reach our homestead

she parked her car. I went out of the car with Liya squeezing my hand I was meet by Granny smiling I really love this woman I smiled back. She was expecting Liya to come out but I did she was shocked.

Gogo: Mbaliyothando!!! She shouted.

Me: Makhulu.

Gogo: Yohhhhhh umntana ka Noluthando. She screamed and held the back of her head. I felt like laughing but I held my laughter the family came running she ambushed me with a hug I hugged her back slowly.

Someone: Ubuyile.

Hayibo WTF!? Some were happy some were not but I didn't care I was here for my grandpa. Gogo took me to his room. He was lying in his bed lifeless he was pale his skin was dry and his lips were dry, he was thin and he was wrinkled. I walked in and screamed my name. He moved a little Gogo smiled even though screaming my name was wrong but I

had to let him know I am here he patted a space and I sat down.

Me: Mkhulu.

Him: Mbaliyothando.

Me: Uziva njani?

Him: Ndingcono.

I spoke to him for a few hours and went to take a bath then wore my boyfriend jean and Lurra's hoodie then took a walk at the mountain I used to take a walked with Grandpa later I went home and called Lurra.

Insert 16



Mbali's pov.



Days have passed and I've been here
Grandpa is getting better no one wants to

tell us what he has. I woke up and made him porridge I dished up his porridge and went to his room he was wide awake he always is. I fed him his porridge then he called Owam. The boys also came here with Sim but she returned to Gauteng, Grandpa summoned them.

Wam: Old man.

Grandpa: Call my lawyer.

Us: Lawyer?

Grandpa: Just call my lawyer.

Wam stood up to call Grandpa's lawyer.

Me: Why do you need a lawyer?

Grandpa: I might pass away soon I want you four to have everything I have.

Me: Grandpa you are healing you are not gonna die anytime soon.

Grandpa: Look behind that painting you will find everything you need.

He said pointing at the painting on the wall.
Wam came back saying Grandpa's lawyer is
on his way then Chuma & Lonke came.

Wam: Why do you need a lawyer?

Grandpa: All the answers you need are in that
painting.

This old man loves speaking in riddles I
wonder why.

Lonke: Stop speaking in riddles.

Chusta: I wish mom was here she was the
only one who understood these riddles.

Grandpa: Your mom is here. She is watching
all of this. In due time she'll be with you but
now you can't see her.

We looked at him confused.

Wam: Mom is here?

Grandpa: Soon enough she will be.

Lonke: What are you saying?

Grandpa: She will help you solve this.

Me: How? She is no more.

Grandpa: She will visit you when the time is right.

Chusta: You are not making any sense.

Then the lawyer barged in we stood up and left him. We decided to go the river for a little swim we packed shorts and a few things. We went to the deep side where people have drowned now one dares to go there but we always swim at that side we swam then Lonke drowned we rushed to him we pulled him out Chuma did a mouth to mouth then Lonke coughed.

Lonke: Someone was pulling me.

Me: Riddles Lonke.

Lonke: I don't know Nana but someone was pulling me.

Chusta: Witchcraft.

Wam: Bakuloya nge hanger.

We laughed at him. We stood up took our things and went home then went to

Grandpa's room he was better he could walk around but we still nursed him. We walked in.

Grandpa: Stop swimming at the river they are trying to kill you.

Us: Hee?

Grandpa: They will kill you one by one.

Chusta: Like they drowned Lonke?

Grandpa: Leave that river alone they know it's your favorite place they will kill you using the river and you will die your bodies will never be found.

Lonke: You lost me old man.

He says confused we all are.

Grandpa: Just do as am saying.

Chuma: You are speaking in riddles.

Wam: We are nothing like mom this riddle solving thing is not our thing.

Grandpa: What happened here stays here. You don't tell anyone what I just told you.

Us: What happens in Vegas stays in Vegas.

Grandpa: Good. Let's take a walk.

He stood up and walked out its good to see that he is getting better by the minute we followed him. He sat down next to a little dam. It's nice seeing him smile and walking around. He was telling us story about how he grew up arghh I love uMnune. After a few hours we went back home.

Grandpa: Today am the one cooking.

I coughed then looked at him.

Wam: Do you even know what cooking is?

Grandpa: I know very well what cooking is.

Lonke: And you think you can do that?

Grandpa: I know so Lulo.

Chuma: You mean the chopping and the stirring you can do?

Grandpa: Sit back and relax.

I sat on kitchen counter swinging my legs then Liya walked in.

Liya: Grandpa what are you doing?

Grandpa: Am cooking supper.

Liya: Ohh shit get a buck of water.

We burst out laughing.

Liya: Guys Grandpa is about to burn the entire house down let me pack my clothes just in case. She ran out she is so bubbly I love her she disappeared into the passage then came back with her bags.

Me: And then?

Liya: Just in case the house burns down all my favorite clothes and toys will be with me. She ran out we laughed at her she came back to take Ndumi's car keys. Then she came to sit next to me.

Liya: So what are you cooking?

She says taking grated carrot.

Grandpa: Let's see where God takes me.

Liya: Can someone order pizza I don't think Grandpa knows what he is doing.

Chuma: You sure you know what you are doing?

Grandpa: Sit back & relax.

Lonke: Am a little bit worried.

Grandpa: Stop worrying.

Me: What you making?

Grandpa: Home made pizza.

We laughed at him until we realized how serious he was his seriousness made me laugh even more.

Liya: You think this is America?

Grandpa: It will never be America but Africa if they can make home made pizza, what's gonna stop me?

Lonke: Dream big old man.

He says patting Grandpa's shoulder.

Wam: I think I'll order pizza.

Chuma: The pizza guy can come here?

We looked at each then said nodded no.

After a few hours Grandpa was done making pizza I was extra shocked. It looked so good it was like I was drooling over a hot guy.

Liya: I think I'll go fetch my clothes. She says jumping of the counter. Siya came in.

Siya: Heard grammops is making pizza. He says taking a slice but quickly drops it cause it was hot.

Wam: Looks like am starring at a hot girl.

Me: Thought I was the only one who felt like am starring at Ta-

I stopped when I noticed Grandpa was starring at me.

Boys: Tar Lurra!!!!

Inner me: Damn that guy is hot ASF cute boyfriend yam madoda.

Then I heard laughter. It was the boys laughing Grandpa didn't show any emotions.

Me: Did I say that out loud?

Grandpa: You did and-

Us: Preach mfundisi preach.

We hate lectures and Grandpa is about to lecture us.

Grandpa: As I was sayi-

Wam: Ezawaziseying mdala?

Lonke: English yaase TV.

Chuma: Uncwadekile umdala.

We laughed Grandpa frowned.

Grandpa dished up for the entire family. I still couldn't believe that Grandpa made pizza but I was happy today me and the boys were sleeping with Grandma we are still babies to her and she missed us. Grandma is just another Sim she is cool and she was wild growing up explains why Sim is like this then my mom was holier like Grandpa then Daluxolo is that cool uncle but a little bit strict, Nokuthula? We will never know. We slept in the middle of the night a phone rang Grandma answered it.

Caller:xxxxxxxxx.

Grandma: Babe?

Caller:xxxxxxxxx.

Grandma: Bhabha?

I laughed my brothers chuckled. I tried taking my phone from her.

Grandma: Hayi mani Isiphosenkosi!!! She even used my second name.

Me: Makhulu!!!

Gogo laughed and carried on talking to Lurra I ended up falling asleep.

>>>>3 weeks later<<<<

I woke up and Grandpa prepared me a hot bath actually all of us and he also made breakfast. Sim & everyone else was here cause Grandpa said he wants to be with his family. I went to the dinning table the old man cooked a feast. We ate over a light conversation Grandpa being Grandpa was giving us lectures. He held his chest like he was feeling some sort of pain we rushed to him Noks & her daughter kept on eating.

Me: Grandpa are you fine?

Grandpa: Am fine.

Lonke: You are not okay Mdala.

Sim: Let's take him to his bed.

Grandpa: Am fine.

We took him to his room laid him on his bed
Grandma was crying.

Grandpa: Am fine nkosinkazi.

Me: You are not!!!

Grandpa: Isiphosenkosi am fine.

He held our hands and mouthed "I love you".

Sim: Dad the doctor is coming hang in there.

Voice: What's happening to Grandpa?

We all turned it was Liya. Ndumi froze as she was watching her Dad losing his life, Sim was holding on to her father for her dear life, I was calling his name, Owam was sitting on the floor crying, Lonke blacked out, Chuma gave Grandpa a glass of water and Grandpa was telling Grandma how much he loved her.

Uncle Dalu rushed to her and took her out of the room then came back with the doctor

Grandpa took a deep breathe . We all

screamed his name. The doctor rushed to him and checked his pulse and other he turned and gave us the am sorry look.

Dalu: Thetha!!! He shouted.

Dr: He is no more.

I think we all knew what the deep breathe meant. Oh gosh we lost him!!!! schools are opening on Thursday in 4 days time.

Me: Are you sure?

Dr: Yes Miss .

Sim & Ndumi cried they looked miserable we stayed with Grandpa's body then they walked I was left with my brothers. I was grateful I spent time with him. We walked out I went to sit next to Sim she was broken and she has a wedding to plan I don't she will be able to do it. I hugged her so tight she let it all out she cried till she was satisfied.

Me: He is in a better place Simmy.

I was relieved a little bit I knew he was in a better place he is with mom. God keep them safe for me I said in my head. Noks was acting like she didn't lose a parent.

Noks: How about we read his will. I knew the real fight was about to begin apparently when mom passed away Noks insisted on the reading the will and she is doing the same.

Dalu: Dad just passed away and you want the will are you mad? At least act like you cared.

Noks: I don't why should I pretend.

I clicked my tongue and went to my room I cried myself to sleep. I was woken up by my ringing phone I checked it was Lurra I was not interested and someone has been banging my door for the past few hours.

Me: Am fine. I won't commit suicide.

I heard footsteps then they were quit. I was on my own. I stood up opened the window a little I turned of the lights took my pillows and threw them on the floor and my gown logged on to Facebook then went to

WhatsApp Lurra left a lot of messages I was sleeping for 8 hours but I have 164 messages

from him and 53 missed calls I laughed then replied "Am good, can I go back to sleep?"

Lurra's pov.

Zuu has been at the hospital for the past few weeks the poison and bleach really messed his system up. Kuhle only visited him once her and her wild aunt left for EC to see her Grandfather. Me & Bhabha have been talking I miss her and am sure she's not eating well but I heard her brothers are with her maybe they are feeding her well.

Godmother called I must be at the scrapyard I take my phone then went to the scrapyard.

Godmother: Mphati.

Me: Godmother.

Godmother: I had Lunga and his puppets tried killing you.

I swallowed hard.

Me: Uhm yeah they did.

Godmother: You didn't inform me.

Me: I was going to inform you.

Godmother: I lost a lot of money boy and I want my money.

Dammit Lunga!!!!

Me: You will get it by the end of the week.

Godmother: You have 2 weeks.

That's new.

Me: Thank you.

Godmother: I have one more surprise for you.

This is the last person I would expect a surprise from.

Me: Surprise?

Never accept a gift from this lady. I was in highschool when I accepted a gift from Godmother then since that day I was stuck with her.

Godmother: Follow me.

I followed behind Godmother like a lost puppy. We got to the room.

Godmother: Come in.

I was shaking. I went in there was Lunga, Zwane and Ntando tired up like punching bags.

Godmother: You see because of them I lost a lot of money. How much are we talking about?

Me: 150 000.

Godmother: You know no one comes in between me & my money and these 3 tried separating us.

Me: Yes.

Godmother: You know what I do to people who are come in between me and my money or hurt any of my boys?

Me: Kill them.

Godmother: Good. This time you are killing them.

What!? I've never killed anyone Godmother & the Nigerian guys do the killing my job is simple very simple if you ask me. Am not about to kill them think of how devastated

Bhabha would be. So I woke up early for this?

Godmother: It's you or them?

I swallowed hard and twisted my bucket hat like it was going to be disappear in my hands I looked at them they had the "please" & "sorry" face on.

Insert 17



Luncumo's pov



I looked at them then looked at Godmother she was serious, I can't kill Bhabha's big brother. I have to make a plan to save them.

Godmother: You can do this I trust you.

Me: I've never killed anyone before.

Godmother: Then this is your opportunity.

Opportunity? To what? To kill Bhabha's brother. Am not doing it, I nod nervously.

Godmother: Bring the machine in.

Some guy dressed in black comes in pushing those hotel trays covered with a black cloth.

Godmother removes the cloth and I get the shock of my life. This tray has knives, guns, axe, hammer, nails, acid, ropes, chains, screwdrivers and whips.

Godmother: Choose a weapon of your choice.

Me: Can I at least think about this.

Godmother: What's there to think about?

They fucked you up as a result you owe me R150 000.

Me: I really need to think about this.

Godmother: You have 5 hours.

I sigh and nod. Am sure I can come up with a plan.

Godmother: I need my R150 000 in 2 days.

Me: You'll get it.

I walk away. How the fuck am I suppose to get R150 000 in 2 days. As am walking she calls me I turn around slowly and walk back to her slowly. Ufa nini sizophumla.

Godmother: Where the hell is Solani?

Me: He's in hospital.

Godmother: What the hell is he doing there? Don't tell me he followed his stupid dream of becoming a doctor.

Me: He's actually a patient.

Godmother: What happened? She shouts.

Me: He cheated and his girlfriend poisoned him.

Godmother: Am losing money because of a stupid girl. Fuck!!! She kicks the tray and the acid glass breaks.

Godmother: Get me that girl.

Me: I don't really know her.

Godmother: Am sure you know her name.

Shit!!! Uhm Jessica, no Lungile mmm that won't work how about Abongile.

Me: Amahle.

Godmother: Give me her picture.

Me: I don't have her picture.

Godmother: Description?

Me: She's chubby, light skinned, very short, she has dreads and a butterfly tattoo on her hand.

Godmother: Is that all?

Me: She also has a tattoo of her name.

Godmother: Good. Tell Solani he owes me a lot of money for all those weeks he spent in hospital. I can't lose so much money because of him.

I nod and walk away. On my out I meet Godmother's ruthless right hand man. He greets me [weird] that's new I greet back. He never greets anyone, I wonder uve ntoni. I get home and walk straight to my wardrobe and take my Nike school bag and sit on the couch I opened it, the bag has R200 000 I've been saving this money so I could pay my

tuition fee, buy myself a house and start my own business. Lunga ruined my life, I play with the money for a little. I met Godmother when I was high school she offered me a job and from that day on I've been stuck with her. I curse the day I met her. Damn!! Lunga knows how to ruin someone's life and plans, had he not shot me I wouldn't have missed the deadline. I throw the bag on the floor and kick my shoes off. I lay on top of my bed facing the roof. I try sleeping but I can't. I call Bhabha and she doesn't answer I blow up her phone still no response. I stood up and went to take a bath with cold water. I dried myself wore my boxers and got undercovers. I slowly drifted off to sleep.

My phone beeps I slowly open my eyes. Damn it's already late, I reach for it with the hope that it is Bhabha. It was really her.

Her:"Am good, can I go back to sleep?"

Me: "Not now, how's your grandfather holding up?"

She turned off her data right after I sent my message. I threw my phone on the other side of the bed. Must I give Godmother my money? Must I wait for Zuu to wake up. How am I suppose to get R150 000 in 2 days. Do they even deserve my help? Must I give up my money for them? Must I take Godmother down? I have a lot of questions running through my mind I don't know what to do. I slept with those thoughts.

My phone rings as am trying to get some sleep. Can't people leave me alone.

Me: Niyathanda udikana nam ne? Ndilele ufunantoni?

The person giggles.

Me: You are even giggling what do you want?

Caller: Yhuuu une'angry Luncumo.

That's my baby.

Me: Bhabha. A little smile forms on my lips.

Her: Ncu...mo. Her voice is breaking.

Me: What's wrong Bhabha.

Her: He passed away.

Me: Who passed away?

Her: My Grandpa Lurra.

Me: I thought you said he was fine.

Her: That's what I thought.

Me: What happened?

Her: He had chest pains while we were eating breakfast so we took him to his room. He told us he loved then took a deep breath and we lost him. What confuses me 3 Dr told us he was fine.

Me: That's really confusing.

Her: Maybe it was his time to go and we have to let him go.

Me: Bhabha?

Her: Mnt'wam.

Me: How about you do an autopsy.

Her: Gogo won't let me do it.

Me: Just call the Dr.

Her: I don't have his number.

Me: Do what you can to find out what killed him.

Her: He was not murdered Luncumo.

Me: Just think about it's the only thing that makes sense.

Her: We are not murderers.

Me: It was a suggestion.

Her: Am tired, I need some rest.

Me: I love you and goodnight.

Her: Nam, nawe.

Me: Sundinyela. Mandikuve undiphendula.

She laughed.

Her: I love you too and sweet dreams.

She dropped the call.

Mbali's pov.

Voice: Mbaliyothando vula lomnyango. She says banging the door. Yoh uvuswa kakubi umntu kwa Jaxa.

Me: Ndilele.

Sim: Tsek vula.

Me: Uhamba no Maphorisa?

Sim: Yebo yebo tsek vula.

We both laugh I stand up and unlock the door.

Me: Ubungakhali?

Sim: Ndikhalelani?

I chuckled. Sim doesn't like showing people how miserable she can get. She wants them to see this strong woman.

Sim: Are you hungry?

Me: Am good baby, are you?

Sim: I don't feel like eating.

Me: So how do you feel?

Sim: Am doing fine and you?

Me: Sim it's okay to be miserable. You also have feelings stop acting like you are don't, even undertaker has feelings he also feels miserable.

Sim: Undertaker? Ubusiza kakuhle wayimosha pha ku undertaker.

She says laughing.

Me: Am trying to motivate you. I want you to express your feelings baby.

Sim: I don't need a therapist.

Me: Mxm.

Chuma: Sangena sangena.

He says entering followed by Owam and Lonke. We burst out laughing.

Sim: Ningena nantoni kunya?

Wam: Bufuna singena nantoni?

Me: How about amanzi ohlamba.

Chuma: Awunazandla?

Lonke: I got you lil sis.

Me: That's ndimthanda ke uLulo ka Tamkhulu.

Sim: Grandpa's baby?

Wam: Ngwana Grandpa?

Lonke frowns, we laugh.

Lonke: Mxm.

He walks out and comes back with a plastic basin that has warm water.

Me: Thanks biggie.

Sim: Phumani!!!

Me: Ulandele nawe baby.

She walked out mumbling. I took a bath then wore my black dress and flip flops. I brushed my teeth then disposed the water. I went to Gogo's room she was sitting in the mattress. My love just lost her loml. Her eyes were puffy you can tell she's been crying.

Me: Thula mama kuzolunga.

Her: Ndiyayaza mntanam.

Sim: Stop motivating us baby.

Her: Simthandile yeka umhimhi wam.

Me: Uyathanda undiqala makhulu lomntana wakho.

Sim: Eshe akaxoki mama.

Her: Simthandile yeka umzukulu wam.

Sim: Ndingu mntakho mfazi.

A lady approached.

Lady: Ninjani emanuneni?

Sim: Usibona sinjani?

Me: Ukrwada.

Her: Besithe asikho right?

Me: Whawhu.

Lady: Am checking up on you.

Sim: Sizigulane?

Lady: Bendithi mandi-

Her: Ubusithini? Ubufana ntoni?

Lady: Andizunicengana nani niyeva?

Sim: Asiva?

Lady: Ubulele indodayakho kuba ufuna imali zayo.

Gogo is faint hearted she just cried.

Sim: Uphume uba awunanto yothetha.

Lady: Bayadelela ngoku ooSimthandile.

Sim: Okay uthini omnye.

The lady clicked her tongue and left. Sim was boiling we sat we Gogo the people were coming and going. Gogo forced me wear a doek I was going up and down making coffee for people and they are very demanding then there is Sim who doesn't take shit from anyone. Yakh'okuhle was just crying she

loved Grandpa but would never showed him.
The rest of the day was boring.

Insert 18



Mbali's pov



Grandpa's funeral was fine but full of fake people and Sim being herself said " Hee lamaphixiphixi nenza ngathi benimthanda ni'actela thina and uMfundi Vundla udinga actor. Ayavuya lamamenemene kodwa soze asibonise there's no need to pretend with him anymore he is no more yinto ebeniyifuna kakade." Grandpa left us broken but am strong. I was preparing to go to school, we all missed 5 days of school and we have to catch up.

Sim:Mbali!!!

Me: Ndiyeza.

I pack my books and take my phone. Everyone was gathered at the table eating I sit down and join. After I was done Sim gave me pocket money and I left them. I get to school and my brothers are waiting for me.

Them: Small.

Me: Small nguyihlo.

They laugh.

Wam: So have you catched up with your school work?

Me: No, we only got here last night and you are asking if I catched up.

Chuma: I don't think he is mentally stable.

Lonke: Was he ever mental stable?

Wam stares at us.

Me: You know moss we joke with you.

He sighs and we laugh.

Me: Guys I have to go and catch up.

Wam: Am coming with you.

Lonke: I think my girl needs my attention.

Chuma: Am going with Lonke.

We nod and walk to class. Lucky me Luvo is in class finishing up his homework.

Me: Luvo, vovo, my vee.

Luvo laughs.

Wam: My polo Viva, my lulu, my vooorm.

Me: My vorisi, my vosho, my vukuvuku.

Luvo: Nifuna ntoni?

Me: Bendicela usiboleke incwadi zakho.

Luvo: Mbaliyothando Mandoyi uzibuyise xa uqhibile not xa kuthanda wena.

He says handing me his books.

Me: Will do.

Wam: Khawuyondicelela pha ku Imibongo.

Me: Ungayi ngokwakho?

Wam: Soze ivume la chick.

I make my way to Imibongo and ask for the books damn that girl was blushing when I spoke about Wam. I see the school's angel has a crush on my brother she's cute. I give

Owam the books and he takes them and goes to his own spot. If I was sitting next to Wam we were not going to finish that's why we taking different spots.

Luvo: So wena no Ta Lurra?

Me: So mna naye?

Luvo: Niyafanelane.

Me: Enkosi mjita.

I say blushing.

Luvo: I didn't say blush ntombi.

Me: Sundidika.

Luvo: Jonga ke mntase ugade uBabalwa no Nosipho.

Me: Ngoba?

Luvo: They are after your manz dzaling.

Me: Who talks like that?

Luvo: I do darling.

Me: Are you gay?

Luvo: Uyadelala ma Lurra.

I blush.

Luvo: As I was saying ubagade chomiie.

Me: Will do.

Luvo: Hee banemikhuba ababantwana.

Me: You know everyone's business?

Luvo: Yes dzaling. For example your sister poisoned her boyfriend.

Me: Tell me more.

I was catching up with Luvo telling me everyone's business. Damn my friend is something else this dude knows everyone's business. He is a walking RGB but I love him. The rest of school was boring it was now after school. I get home and change.

Me: Sim!!!

I say opening the door in her bedroom. Wow she is packing her bags I guess she is leaving.

Me: Are you leaving?

Am so heart broken.

Sim: Yeah baby but you can visit me anytime I mean am 3 hours away.

Me: Sure.

Sim: Please don't be mad at me.

Me: Am not Sim, am really not.

Sim: You can come every weekend.

Me: Yeah it doesn't matter.

Sim: Look I really have to go.

Me: Yeah Sim everyone comes and go so it doesn't matter. It doesn't make any difference.

Sim: Am not leaving you forever.

Me: Okay Simmy.

Sim: Your backroom is almost finish.

Me: I can see that.

Sim: I'll drop by everytime I have a chance.

Me: There's no need for that Simthandle.

Sim: There is a need for that and I'll send money every week.

Me: I have a job. I also understand that you are working and you have a fiance so it doesn't really matter. You have a life to live I can't hold you back.

Sim: You are not ho-

Me: It doesn't matter mntase.

Sim: It does Mbali you are my ba-

Me: Let me go finish my school work.

I guess it's back to my old life yep let me brace myself it's going to be hard. I make my way to my room and lock the door I write my homework but I can't seem to focus so I just cry. Hlehle keeps on banging the door I open for her.

Hlehle: Sim wants to say bye.

Me: Tell her I said the same.

Hlehle: Please don't be mad at her.

Me: Am not Yakh'okuhle.

Hlehle: You are.

Me: Am not, okay?

Hlehle: Yes you are.

Me: What if I am? Do you know the pain of becoming a maid in your mom's house? Do you know the pain of being reminded all the time that your mom is dead? Do you know the pain of being beaten up for no reason? Do you know the pain of eating bread each and

everyday? Know the pain of being hated by your own father? Have you ever been replaced? Yakh'okuhle do you spend the entire day looking over your shoulder cause you can't trust your stepmom? No, you don't your life has been smooth. You are dad's golden child and am the pathetic motherless bitch. Ever since your mom got here she's bought nothing but pain to me she made me hate myself. I have scars all over my body because of her she hurt me and you want me to be happy cause Sim is leaving? I can't be happy my life is about to get miserable and you want me to smile and kiss her goodbye?

Hlehle: I don't bu-

Me: Shut up then.

Hlehle: Mbali don't shu-

Me: Move I want to say bye to Sim.

I say wiping my tears.

She moves away from the door. Sim was already loading her bags in her car.

Sim: Nana I love you.

Me: The feeling is mutual.

Sim: Mbali I kno-

Me: Stop acting like you know what am going through Simthandile.

I say walking away.

Sim: Mbali!!!

Me: Bye.

I walk to the kitchen and start peeling potatoes Kuhle & Sim walk in. They start talking but I don't have time for them I have to finish what am doing before Spitfire gets here. Sim tried hugging me but I was not up for it then she left. I finished cooking and went to my room. I took R50 from my bag and make my out. I went to Thera's shack and brought me weed. I rolled 3 joints before leaving Thera's shack. On my way home I see Lurra am not in the mood I wipe my tears and put on a smile.

Him: Baby.

Me: My Amarula.

He smiled revealing his white teeth. He leaned in for a kiss but he quickly moved back.

Him: Are you high?

Me: What? No. I would totally never.

I say laughing.

Him: Jonga am gonna piggyback you to my place and we are gonna talk.

Me: Andi-

Him: Shut up.

I laugh he stares at me. I stop laughing he piggybacks me to his place. He gets in and throws me on the bed. He took off my shoes and covered me with blankets.

Him: Sweet dreams Bhabha.

Me: Luncumo.

Him: Bhabha.

Me: Can you join me?

Him: Andifuni.

Me: Andikazulala moss.

Him: Bhekela.

Luncumo's pov.

Bhabha moved making space for me. I played with her hair till she fell asleep ewe she was talking and laughing but she ended up sleeping. I don't understand why would she smoke weed she can talk to me if she wants to but she rather smoke weed. I checked the time on my watch and got dressed am meeting up with Lunga, Zwane and Ntando. I gave up my savings and now they have to repay my money I had plans with the money. Zuu was discharged but he owes Godmother a lot of money. I make my way to Zuu's car.

Me: Madoda.

Lunga: We have your money but we need something from you.

Me: What do you want?

Zwane: Break up with Mbaliyothando.

Me: Give me one reason.

Lunga: You are going to break her heart and I would never allow you to date my sister.

Me: Even after I saved your life.

Lunga: It's simple you break up with my little sister you get your money.

Me: For get it.

Zwane: She deserves someone better dammit.

Me: Whose better? You?

Zwane: Yes am better.

Lunga: She deserves a rich guy. Someone who loves her not you.

Ntando: She is old enough to choose her own boyfriend.

At least one of them is clever.

Lunga: She can date anyone but you. I'd rather have her date Zwane than you.

Zwane: I deserve her.

Ntando: Let her date whoever she wants to date.

Me: Am not breaking up with her.

Lunga: You will break up with her like it or not.

Me: Forget it. Just give me my money.

Zwane: You have to break up with her first.

Me: When Bhabha wakes up I must be next to her.

Lunga: Wow you are even having sex with my little sister.

Me: That's not what I said.

Ntando: Let them date. They are old you can't be making choices for them.

Me: We are not breaking up forget it.

Ntando: Mphati here is your money. R150 000, thank you for helping us.

He says handing me a bag Lunga snatches it from him.

Lunga: Break up with my little sister.

Insert 19



Luncumo's pov.



Me: Am not breaking up with her. Are we clear?

Ntando: Crystal clear.

Zwane: Just break up with her and you'll get your money back.

Ntando: Kutheni ninje? Badala ababantu. Let them be.

Lunga: She is my little sister.

Ntando: You are not her blood brother and her only brother is Lulonke. You have to accept that.

Lunga: I won't she is my baby sis

Ntando: He saved our fucken lives you should be grateful.

Zwane: Grateful? It's his fault Godmother kidnapped us. He should've died.

I chuckled.

Me: Are we really going to point fingers?

Ntando: Guys look at the bright side all of us are alive.

Lunga: There's nothing bright about him being alive.

I love how they can't back each other.

Ntando: Nothing bright? You know what Godmother does to people who kill her boys? She kills them along with their families.

Zwane: You are such a coward. She wasn't going to kill us.

Ntando: What was she going to do? She killed her own husband and kids they were trying to get "in-between" her and her money.

My jaw slightly drops. She killed her own family. Her own blood. Who chooses money over family.

Ntando: She killed the people she loved. She doesn't give a shit about you, just imagine

what she can do to you. She can kill you in a blink of an eye.

Lunga: I'd love to see her try.

Zwane: She doesn't stand a chance. We are well connected.

Ntando: Well connected? Everyone dances to Godmother's tune. Those people would choose their families over you, anytime.

Ntando: Just give him his money.

Zwane: He is not getting any money, he must break up with my future wife.

He is obsessed with Bhabha and obsessed people can do anything .They can be dangerous.

Ntando: You are obsessed with the poor girl. She doesn't want you, she doesn't care about you. You better delete her pics and everything else you have of hers in your stupid phone.

Me: So you are fucken stalking my girlfriend!?

Ntando throws the bag full of money at me.

Ntando: You can go, thank you for your help.

We handshake.

Lunga: You can't give him my fucken money!

I open the door and climb out with Lunga and Zwane shouting.

I get home and Bhabha is still sleeping. Her lips are pouted and slightly opened. I take a few snaps and set one as my wallpaper. I check the time and her 2 hours is almost over, I shake her. She slowly opens her eyes I flash a smile she smiles back. I peck her forehead.

Me: Sundiqhela. I say in a calm tone.

She looks at me confused.

Me: Weed? Uyintoni kwi ntsangu?

She sits up straight and looks at me.

Me: Intsangu Bhabha.

Her: Sukulwa ndi-

Me: Awukwazi uthetha ngoku?

Her: Hayibo!! Ndizama uthetha and uyandivala. She claps her hands and says "mnk"

Me: Utheni? Usindwa Yintoni?

Her: Hee, you don't understand my childhood wena. My life is fucked up. One minute everything is cool I have everyone I love, then boom they are gone. All of them. They all end up leaving Luncumo or they all end up dead.

Me: Who died?

Her: My aunt she left me and she is brave enough to say "am 3 hours away". I just hate living with my stepmom who happens to be my mom's sister. I hate myself because of her. Ever been body shamed? I hate myself Luncumo. Look at how beautiful Nosipho is. She is a it girl and then there's me whose ugly.

Me: Xolo kaloku.

Her: Yima ndiqgibe kaloku wena ufuna uyazi uba yintoni ingxaki yam.

Me: Ndimamele mnt'wam.

Her: My life is really fucked only my brothers make me happy. They make me forget all of my problems. She made me hate myself, I still do.

Me: Ndijonge Bhabha.

She turns to look at me and faintly smiles. I caressed the side of her cheeks and pecked her lips.

Me: Umhle Bhabha.

Her: You are only saying that to make me feel better.

Me: Am not. Trust me you are beautiful.

She smiles faintly and hugs me.

Me: Bhabha.

Her: Mmm.

Me: Ndiyakuthanda.

Her: The feeling is mutual sthandwa sam.

I lifted her head up so we could make eye contact and she giggled.

Me: Uthini mnt'wam?

Her: The feeling is mutual.

I turned her around and sat on top of her.

Me: Bhabha ndithi ndiyakuthanda.

Her: Nam ndithe the feeling is mutual.

I tickled her.

Her: Lu...ncu...mo.

Me: Mhhh.

Kuhle's pov.

I was hurt by Mbali's words. I don't know how to help her. I really want to help but I can't. I walk to her room and knock. She doesn't open so I let myself in and she is not here. I pack her books and start cleaning her room. I jam to her favorite songs. Am facing the roof. Thinking of how much I've hurt her so much I've hurt am sure she hates me I was disturbed by my phone ringing.

Me: Yintoni?

Caller: Am sorry am really sorry.

Mxm that's Zuu.

Me: Ufunantoni?

Him: Can we meet up?

Me: Thetha ngoku cause am not coming.

Him: Ndiyakucela it's really important.

Me: We can discuss it over the phone.

Him: Please I need to talk to you face to face.

Me: Phi? Ngabani xesha?

Him: Park. Now if you can.

Me: Am coming.

I dropped the call and wore my sleepers I went to my room. I wore my white airforce and went out. I locked the door and the gate since there was no one at home. I got to the park and Zuu was sitting on the bench. He stood up and tried hugging me I pushed him and sat down.

Me: Yintoni?

Him: Jonga I kno-

Me: Sundinjongisa into ezingekhoyo.

Him: Am really sorry baby. I know I hurt you, I didn't do it on purpose it was a mistake.

Me: Mistake? Uyayazi mistake Uzubenathi?

Him: Ewe ndiyayaza.

Me: Awuyazi. I'm mistake kutshisa i'rice.

I'm mistake kuwisela i'phone emchamweni.

Him: Kuhle ndicela uxolo. Ndiyakuthanda Kuhle kakhulu. Soze ndiphinde.

Me: Ewe soze uphinde casue am breaking up with you. No, I broke up with you the day you sent me your sex tape.

Him: Kuhle ndiyakucela.

Me: Nzokubona eroundini mtshana.

I stood up and walked away. When I got home there was no one. I watched TV then Dad came home. He kissed my forehead and hugged me. He is the best dad I love him so much. He made popcorns while I choose the a

movie. We watched "What happened to Monday".

Him: Mbali!!!

Me: She's not here.

Him: Uphi?

Me: She went out.

Him: Uthi ngubani ozondenzela itea.

Me: Ndingayenza.

Him: Hlala ndizolinda yena abuye.

Me: Hayibo tata ndiyakwazi ukwenza itea.

Him: Akhomntana wam ozokwenza tea.

Me: Moss naye ngumntana wakho.

Him: Ndinabantwana ababini.

Me: Ewe. Ndim no Mbali.

Him: Nguwe no Nosipho.

Me: Uyitye nephepha wena sozuve. I said clapping my hands.

Mbali walked in Dad stood up and charged towards her. She moved back and fell. She tried standing up but Dad slapped and

punched her she fell then he kicked her in her stomach.

Me: Tata!!!

Him: Yintoni?

Me: Ayikho ebethisayo.

Him: Uqale nini uphuma wena? He said pointing at Mbali.

Her: Bendi.... He didn't even let her finish he kicked her again.

Me: Tata myeke!! He doesn't stop instead he beats her up. I have to do something I pull the vase and hit him in his head. Mbali screams as he collapses on top of her.

Her: Kuhle!!!

Me: Mhhh.

Her: He's heavy. Move him from me. Please!!!

Me: Uhm Ohk.

Her: Yakhokuhle Mandoyi!!!

I jump and look at her. She indicates I move the body I walk to her slowly. Mom walks in

with Nosi holding a lot of shopping bags. She drops them and walks to Mbali.

Mom: I always knew you were a bitch. How do you fucken sleep with your own father!

I run to Mbali and move dad's body. She stands up. She is breathing heavily and Mom is breathing fire.

Nosi: Wow this cheap ass hoe sleeps with her own father.

Me: You are sleeping with your mom's man.

Ushiye unyoko.

Mbali laughs and quickly puts on a hard face.

Voice: Hayi ushiye unyoko. Baninzi oSbonelo.

Kwanda walks in with 2 bags. A weekend bag and a school bag.

Kay: Owemji!! Your father is bleeding.

Mbali kneels down trying to help him. I glare at her she stops and stands up.

Mom: Nosipho are you sleeping with my man.

Nosi: No mom.

Kay: Uphi uSim azobona.

Mbali: Akekho.

Kay: Wow, uyaphoswa. Am sleeping over.

Mbali: I hate announced guests. She mumbles. She really hates unexpected visitors.

Kay: Sim asked me to stay with you.

Us: Ohh.

Mom: Nosipho uyandityela? Uyandishiya mntanam?

Nosi: Nawe moss yatyela wade washiya isidumbu.

Kay: Streynji!!

Mom: Ndingunyoko.

Nosi: Naye ebengu sister wakho.

Mom slapped her.

Nosi: Oh my gosh. Did you slap me?

Mom: Jonga soze ulala nedodam ndikhona.

Nosi: Kuyafana uyamjolela.

Wow the beef in this house is too much.

Me: Ku'hot apha.

Mom: Uzokholwa umfazi wakhe.

Nosi: Usually amadoda akholwa ompha kamnandi. Mbali's jaw dropped.

Mbali: Am believable.

We all turn to look at her. She shrugged.

Mom slaps Nosi so hard that she stumbles.

Mom never hit Nosipho. I was the one who got all the beatings. Nosi is mom's favorite child.

Lunga's pov.

After Lurra left. I drove to my house.

Ntando stepped out and went to his car he drove. Me & Zwane walked in. He sits down and turns the TV on. I sit on the opposite couch.

Me: Do you really love my sister?

Zwane: I do a lot.

Me: Do you want to date her?

Zwane: I'd love to.

Me: Then she is yours.

Zwane: You men Mbali is mine.

Me: Yeah she is.

Zwane: I can do anything with her?

Me: Whatever you want. I mean she is now officially dating you so you can do anything. She is yours and only yours.

Zwane smiles like retard.

Zwane: I don't have to ask her out?

Me: No, you don't. Like I said Mbali is yours. What I say goes.

Mom: Unoba ungu Yesu.

Me: Am older than her so I have each an every right to date her.

Mom: Am sick and tired of putting up with your shit. Everyone is tired of you. Ucinga siyakukolota. Mamela apha ke asikukoloti. She clicked her tongue and threw the Tupperware on the floor.

Her: Am going to my house.

Me: Never mind her.

Zwane: Are you sure you don't have a problem with ne dating her.

Me: A problem? I'd rather she dates you than him.

Insert 20.



Lunga's pov.



Zwane: What does she like?

Me: I don't know. Why are you asking?

Zwane: I want to buy her something nice since she is officially my girl.

Me: I don't know her that much.

Zwane: What do you think she will like.

Me: Girls loves perfumes, necklaces, earrings, shoes and money.

Zwane: I'll buy her a necklace and a watch.

Me: Make sure they are expensive.

Zwane: Will do. Do you think she will love them?

Me: Am not really sure.

Zwane: Can't you ask your brother or someone?

Me: Let me call him. I say pulling my phone from my pocket.

I call him he answers on the second ring and he is breathing heavily.

Him: Khawuleza ndi'busy.

Me: Utya impundu kwedini.

Him: Nditya impukane. Yitsho le ubufuna uyithetha uyeke undibuza ukunya.

Me: Ndisemdala.

Him: Intsha from the shop leyo.

Me: Am still your brother.

Him: Utsho.

Me: Sundiqhela Chuma.

Him: Uyanya moss.

He dropped the call. I called him again.

Him: Awuzazi ufuna uthini neh?

Me: Kukho into endifuna ukubuza yona.

Him: Ngewungathi uyakhawuleza ubuza.

Me: So uMbaliyothando ujola no Luncumo?

Him: Ha.a abajoli [Zwane smiles] they are dating. Engaged to be married. 19 weeks pregnant. Expecting twins a girl & a boy.

Ubuziswa yintoni?

I look at Zwane he is fuming with anger.

Me: They are engaged?

I ask shocked.

Him: Yes. The elders said she can't give birth out of wedlock so yeah. Tomorrow she is meeting up with the wedding planner.

Me: When are they getting married?

Him: I was too excited to ask her that.

Me: What would she like a wedding present?

Him: Balenciaga jersey, Gucci belt & stockings, iPhone 11, weave ye R3000, a black G wagon and some peace of mind.

Me: Thank you. Can you tell me more about her.

Him: Ubokhe uyifake kwi-exam lo question uyeke undiqhele.

He dropped the call. Me and Zwane look at each other.

Zwane: We have to do something.

Me: I know but what?

Zwane: How about abortion pills?

Me: You can take her out and put the pills in her food.

Zwane: And Mphati will hate her for killing his kids. What about the wedding?

Me: We could take videos of you and her kissing then show them to Lurra.

Zwane: And I'll be her shoulder to cry on.

It's a great plan.

My problem with Lurra? Godmother gave him the Xhosa section and said we report to him. I can't report to a lowlife who was abandoned by both his mom & dad. I mean he is from a poor family but we have to report to him, not in a million years. Apparently he brings more

money and he is dedicated. I don't like him I just don't and I won't.

Morning.

-
-

Mbali's pov.

I was woken up by my phone ringing. I searched for it and found it. I answer.

Me: Mhh.

Caller: Good morning.

I check the time. It's 5am and I haven't made breakfast damn.

Me: Morning babe.

Him: Unjani sthandwa sam?

Me: Ndiphilile mnt'wam, wena?

Him: Am good now that I heard your voice.

I blush.

Him: And she's blushing.

Me: Stop it.

Him: You like it?

We burst out laughing.

Me: Ufunantoni ek'seni kangaka?

Him: Nothing I just wanted to hear your voice before bathing.

Me: Ohh. Uyaphi?

Him: Ndiyafunda Bhabha.

Me: Ohh. Ndilele kemna.

I dropped the call and rolled out of bed. My phone rings again. I answer.

Him: Am the one who called you and I get to drop the call.

Me: Ufowunele undixelele lo ice kengoku?

Him: Uthini?

Me: I love you.

Him: I love you too.

Me: I love you more.

Him: I love you the most. Mayiphele apho mnt'wam.

I giggle and he drops the call.

I make breakfast and set the kitchen table.

Kwanda comes dressed for school and am still

making breakfast. How I wish I was Luthando
laughs.

Kay: Usenganguye. He says laughing.

Me: Sudlala ngam Kwanda. I say laughing.

Kay: Nyani unganguye chommam.

Me: Uhlekisa ngam Kwanda?

Kay: Hayi my friend but what am say is
unganguye if ungashiya abazali ulandele
amaphupho akho.

Me: Uthi ndithini Kay?

Him: Shiya abazali ulandele amaphupho akho.

Me: Kwanda are you play with my hurt?

Kay: Ayikho njalo qha wena you are view with
the wrong eye.

Me: Am not even view it with my mehlos.

Hlehle: English love us never didn't. She says
taking a bowl from the cupboard.

We all burst out laughing.

Hlehle: Mmh you made porridge.

Me: Perfect food for this cold whether.
Gauteng is so undecided when it comes to weather.

Kay: Whuu 4 seasons in one day.

Me: Mandiyohlamba good people.

Them: Ohk.

I bathed and wore my tracksuit. I packed my books according to my timetable then Kay combed my hair. Am going to the salon after school this is too much. I leave the dishes unwashed and make my way to school. As always my brothers are waiting for me at the gate. I hug and kiss their cheeks we walk to our spot.

Lonke: Yazi Lunga called me last night.

Wam: Asi' jumpi. Asixhasi.

We burst out laughing.

Chuma: Ubufuna sithini?

Me: Noba ebefuna u'unhear the call.

We laugh.

Lonke: Ncamsil.

Me: Don't ncamisa.

Wam: Don't qabula.

Chuma: Wow I give up on you Licky lick. He imitates Eric Zikalala from Muvhango.

Wam: Say something you are giving up on me Nasty C?

We all burst out laughing.

Lonke: Anizundimamelela kengoku?

Me: Guys ifuna uthetha indoda yekhaya.

Chuma: Thetha lholho.

We laugh Lonke stares at us. We stop laughing and shift our attention to him.

Lonke: He was asking uMbali uphuma nini es'kolweni? Uhamba nabani? Her favorite food? Type of phone she loves? Her favorite color?

Chuma: Streynji.

Me: Okhwad.

Wam: Flabbergatted.

Lonke: Gatted? He says laughing and we join in.

Me: Did I not die?

Chuma: Did we not funeral you?

We laugh once again. Then Wam stops laughing.

Wam: Why does he care?

Lonke: He's up to something.

Me: Sanumcingela maybe he is trying to be sweet.

Chuma: Hayi makayeke cause ayizusebenza.

Me: Give the guy a chance.

Lonke: Not in a million years. Anganya emile.

Wam: He is trying to control your life.

Me: He won't. Let's just give him a chance.

Chuma: Let you give him a chance.

Susithathala mfondini.

Wam: I'd rather die guys. The day I give him a chance cela nindise kwi-mental asylum.

Lonke: Jonga mntase we understand you are bored and shit kodwa don't give Lunga a chance.

Me: Yazizi akekho that bad.

Wam: Khawuyeke ubangu msamariya ongcwele yintoni wasoloko ufuna ubona the best emntwini.

Chuma: We understand ufuna ufele ekorinte kodwa sude ubetemtem oluhlobo.

Lonke: Wase wapatyupatyu lo'swine.

Chuma: Qina is'bindi uyeke uzinyelisa ngo Lunga.

Wam: Yibane liver small okanye ubekrwada kuye cause uyakunyele ngoku.

Me: Yazi niyathanda umcingela uLunga.

Lonke: Wanna know for the why?

Me: For the Z?

Lonke: Cause uLunga only spoils us xa yephezukweyelenqe.

Me: Yelenqe lantoni?

Wam: Asizuyazi pharoro.

Me: Ohh niyakwazi uyazi xa ephezukweyelenqe kodwa anilazi eliyelenqe nithetha ngalo.

Chuma: Mamela apha kunyakwakho.

Me: Suthi ndikukunya tyhini.

Chuma: Kukho into ayifunayo uLunga besides uLunga yinja and he uses people to get whatever he wants.

Me: Akhonto anandisebenzisela yona.

Wam: He hates Tar Lurra.

Me: Ohh that. They'll have to put their differences aside.

Lonke: And you believe Lunga will do that?

Me: Yes.

The bell rings.

Wam: We will have a Mbaliyothando talk after school.

Me: A Mbaliyo- what talk?

Wam: A you talk.

Me: Wow. You guys am surprised.

Chuma: McDonald's after school we have to dis-talk this.

Us: Dis-talk?

Chuma: Discuss + talk = dis-talk.

Lonke: We really have to dis-thetha this.

Me: Does that word even exist?

Lonke: It does.

We walk to class arguing about this discussion.

School was cool. Luvo had more news uyazithanda indaba lomfana. After I waited for the boys at the gate. Someone covered my eyes and they have hard hands. I sniffed trying to figure out who the hell is this cause this is not Lurra's cologne.

Lonke: Hosh, myeke mjita.

The person removes their hands and it's the doctor.

Wam: Yintoni wa'cosy naye?

Dr. Yintombi yami.

Us: Ntombi yakho?

Me: Uyandifanisa Dr.

Chuma: Ulahlekile Dr. Gez' eyihlekisa Zwane.

Lonke: Yizohlamba Gez' eyihlekisa.

We burst out laughing.

Chuma: Ha.a yinzule lena.

Wam: Wozogeza Gez' eyihlekisa.

We laugh Geze frowns.

Chuma: Inoba ugeze ehlekisa.

Lonke: Ayinyubisi ke le' joke Gez' elaughisa.

We laughed so hard.

Me: Ayikho mnandi Silly enyibusa.

We laugh. The Dr was getting angry.

Dr: Andizanga kuni.

Wam: Khasiyithethe leyo.

Dr: Wifey I got you something.

Me: Hayi bakulahlile abangasekhoyo mtshana.

Jonga bra I love my boyfriend am happily taken. My boyfriend, boyfriends me so good.

Dr: Kuyafana akanamali.

We chuckle.

Chuma: Mamela apha msunu not everything is about money.

Me: Uyathanda usiqwebisele Chumani.

Lonke: All the time.

Wam: Afike sefuna ukoyikwa unjandini

Chuma: Ibe ingekho mbi lanqa.

Wam: Sufuna silwa babe.

Me: Ngenisilwa nalo ubhudo.

Lonke: Licebo elihle nelo.

Me: Yhea Dr mentally are you stable?

Dr: Last time I checked I was.

Wam: Last time? Hayi bekukudala ngoko uzuphinde uyo'checka.

Lonke: I was? Am sure you lost your mind a long time ago.

Me: Jonga nizosheka naye mna ndiyoteka.

Gez' eyihlekisa's clenched and unclenched. I kissed my brothers cheeks.

Dr: Mna?

Wam: Wena ubutheni?

Me: Yophinda ibonene marora.

They nodded I walked away. I took a taxi and went to town. I went to my work place.

Vuyolwam was working I sat on the high chairs I came here cause I missed Mam' Lindiwe.

Me: Baby VeeLee.

Vuyolwam giggled and made her way to me.

Me: Am so hungry.

Her: Why are you here? I thought you only come through on weekends.

Me: I do but I missed Mam'Lindiwe.

She laughed.

Her: Mam' Lee has this huge crush on this other guy.

Me: Which other guy?

Her: The necklace guy. Since that she's been talking about him.

Mam' Lindi: It's not a crime. Wena wonke ubelapha during the week kutheni?

Me: I came here to tell you I'll be working during the week from next week.

Mam' Lindi: Uvakele.

Me: Misale kahle bangani emakhaya. I said standing up I took my bag and made my way to the salon. I did braids and went home.

Ever sat on a chair for a long time and felt like your ass was decreasing? That's how I

feel right now. I get home and changed then made me food. I ate then called Sim.

Her: Bitchhhhhhhhhh!!!

Me: Simmy.

Her: How's you?

Me: Am good wena?

Her: Am fine. So how are they treating you?

Me: Good actually and why did you not tell me that Kwanda will be sleeping here for a week?

Her: I forgot, sorry.

Me: I hate announced guest but it's nice having him here I wish he could move in.

"Simthandile xa usefowunini uthi kupheka bani?"

Her: Ndizopheka.

"Ndilambe ngoku futhi ngubani lo uthetha naye okwenza undidelele?"

Sim: Khawundimele Brain.

"Ohh lendoda othetha nayo is more important than me?"

Sim: It's my sister's daughter.

"Your sister's daughter makes you disappear for a few weeks?"

Sim: Ewe she does. Your hoes makes disappear for months.

"Ungathi undilibele."

Sim: Andikulibelanga tuu and umdala for acting like this.

"Simthandile uyandijolela ngoku? Wathi ndimdala for acting like this."

Sim: Ndibe ndingaxoki xa ndisithi umdala.

"Uyaphendula into entsha. Iyagezisa le boyfriend yakho"

I just dropped the call. Wow that's really toxic and their are getting married in December. Am sure by then they will be fine.

Insert 21.



Mbali's pov.





I wipe my tears and roll out of bed [sigh] so today it's my late brother's birthday. It's still dark outside I wash my face and brush my teeth. I check the time it's 4am yey I woke up in time. I open the curtains and stand there. I look up at the sky am trying to communicate with my brother.

Me: I wish you were here with me. I would love to know what having a big brother felt like have felt. But your life would have been miserable like mine, maybe you would have hated yourself more than I hate myself, maybe you were going to be happiness and joy bringer. Maybe dad was also going to hate & beat the living shit out of you or would have been a better dad. I just wish I had the chance to meet you or see you. I call you my brother yet I don't know where your grave is, even dad and mom don't know where were

buried. What did Gogo & Mkhulu do with your body? I wonder what you looked like. I wonder what your smile looked like, maybe you had dimples. What If you looked like a bouncer or a body builder, am sure your voice was angelic or it sounded like a tractor. I want you to know how much I love you and happy birthday ZanoKhanyolwethu Mandoyi. I look at the stars. My brother is watching me. I say in my mind.

Me: You are a year old ZanoKhanyolwethu. I feel hands on my waist. I sniff and that's Hlehle. She hands me coffee.

Her: I wish I had the chance to see him. She says resting her head on my neck.

Me: What do you think he looked like?

Her: Sis Noluthando & dad. What do you think he looked like?

Me: I think he was light in complexion, tall really tall, had a cute smile that would bring joy & happiness, had beautiful brown eyes,

had the most beautiful voice the world has ever heard.

Her: You have a really nice and amazing imagination. You know how to paint a good picture of what you think of your brother. How did you think you imagine your first boyfriend to look like?

Me: I imagined him loving me, caring, sweet, demanding, overprotective, I imagined him treating me good. I wanted him to be my first and last lover, the only man that could say "I tapped that pussy" I wanted him to be the "no one could ever come to me and tell me my girlfriend slept with them." Is that even possible? Am I asking for a lot?

Her: Its called dreaming. And guess what?

Me: What?

Her: You can still have that with Ta Lurra. I smiled as I remembered that I had him.

Me: I love him. I really do.

Her: I know you do. You guys look good together. I pray that you guys never break up instead go through everything together.

Me: Do you think he would ever leave me like mom, Grandpa and big brother? What if he hurts my feelings.

Her: I don't think he would, he wouldn't do that to you. See how a kiss helped him wake up from the hospital that very same kiss could send him back to hospital. Even if he did hurt your feelings I don't think he would do it on purpose. He loves you too much to break your heart.

Me: Thank you.

Her: For what?

Me: For sharing your wisdom with me. Let's make a video singing him happy birthday.

Her: Let me fetch my phone.

Me: Ohk.

She went out and I took a bath she came back while I was still bathing she had to wait

for me. I lotioned and wore my PJs. We took videos a lot of them of them and pictures for Zanolwethu's birthday. His name is really nice. After she left I decided to call Luncumo.

Him: Sthandwa sam. He says yawning.

- My love.

Me: Ubulele mnt'wam? Uxolo for ukuphazamisa.

- Were you sleeping? Sorry for disturbing.

Him: Undiphazamisa? I love it when you call me baby and I would leave everything and anything just to talk to you.

- Disturbing?

Me: Just wanted to let you know how much I love and appreciate you.

Him: Uthandwa ndim Bhabha. Kutheni uyafa sthandwa sam?

- I love you too. Are you dying my love?

Me: Andifi Lurra I did it cause I wanted you to know how deep my love is for you is.

- Am not dying.

Him: Just know I love you more than I love myself, okay Bhabha?

Me: I do. You can go back to sleep.

Him: Uyakuthanda uLuncumo.

- Luncumo loves you.

Me: Ndimthanda isdudla esingangento.

- I love him a lot.

He giggled.

Him: Ndikuthanda ukodlula yokinto sthandwa sam.

- I love you more than anything.

Me: Bye.

Him: Ndiyakuthanda.

- I love you.

I giggled and dropped the call. The time was 05:12. I went back to sleep. I was woken up by Hlehle. She made me breakfast.

Me: Mhhh breakfast in bed. What did I do?

Her: It's our brother's birthday I thought I should spoil you.

Me: Thank you. After eating we are going shopping am spoiling you.

Her: Let me choose an outfit. I have to look fire maybe I'll get myself a boyfriend. A hot one to be exact. She says walking out.

Me: Don't try replacing Zuu. Fix your issues. I shout as she is walking out.

Her: Am replacing him. That's it. She shouts back.

I ate finish and took a bath. I tied my braids and wore a blue ripped jeans and a yellow top. I went out and washed the dishes.

Dad walked in. I mentally rolled my eyes.

Dad: Jonga ke sisi akekho uSimthandile so what I say goes.

I kept quiet and carried on with the dishes.

Dad: Sundiqhela ndithatha nawe phendula.

- Am talking to you. Answer me!!

Noks also walked in and kissed dad.

Noks: From now on you do the cleaning and everything else.

Dad: Also hand over that phone. It's going to distract you from doing your house chores.

Hlehle: Kutheni ninochuku?

Me: It's their house after all.

Hlehle: Their? It's Sis Noluthando's house.

Noks: SHE IS NOT HERE.

Hlehle: That doesn't change the fact that this is her house. She says taking the plate I was washing and throwing it on the floor.

Noks: That's expensive.

Hlehle: It's expensive and you can't even wash them. I wow you.

Dad: We have a maid.

Me: Maid? That came out as a whisper.

Dad always complained when mom wanted me to wash the dishes or do any house chores.

He always told me kids are meant to play and do their school work not adult chores.

Everytime I did something wrong my mom wanted to give me a hiding but dad always defended me.

Dad: What do you think you are? You are a maid.

Hlehle: A maid? She's not a maid but your daughter. What an egg donor you are.

Dad: Kukwam apha.

- This is my house.

Hlehle: Masambe Mbali.

Me: Izitya Kuhle.

- The dishes.

Hlehle: Mbali have a back bone for once.

Stand up for yourself and start fighting your own battles. Mbaliyothando Isiphosenkosi Mandoyi be strong I know you can be. Don't let them walk all over you. I can't keep on fighting your battles for you, Simthandile can't keep on fighting your battles. You can't let them walk all over you. I know you are stronger than you think.

Me: Ohk. That came out as whisper. I took my phone and yellow sling bag then went out. We walked to the taxi rank.

Me: Hlehle.

Her: Mhhh.

Me: Thank you.

Her: It was nothing. But you have to stand up for yourself. What do you want to be?

Me: A lawyer.

Her: You can be one. You will be one, okay Ms Mandoyi?

Me: Yes, I can be one and I will be one.

She smiled and took my hand in to hers.

I don't have enough money for shopping. No, I have money in my bank account but am keeping it for school. I can't be spending it.

No one is going to pay for my fee's, no one cares, not even my own dad. So we decided to go to Mug & bean and we bought a cake.

Me: You know the cake would be more enjoyable with coffee.

Her: I think it will be more enjoyable with juice.

Me: Have you seen how beautiful the mug & bean looks? It looks like heaven. The aroma calms my flat ass down.

Her: Have you tasted how amazing juice is?

Me: Hlehle we drink juice all the time.

Her: We drink coffee all the time.

Me: But the coffee here is more than amazing. And I would do anything to drink it.

Mug & bean coffee is amazing.

Her: Then you are paying Ma Lurra.

I blushed and nodded.

Voice: No, I'll pay for it. Said a voice behind me.

I turned to see who it was and it was the world's most annoying doctor. Bhut' Lunga's friend.

I rolled my eyes and he smiled before taking my hands and kissing it. I pulled my hand back to me and looked at Kuhle who had questioning eyes. The doctor bowed down and

tried kissed my forehead but I pushed his head.

Dr: What's wrong wifey? I looked at him and clicked my tongue.

Me: Wifey?

Dr: You and me are dating. Am your night in a shining armor and you are my princess. No, you are my Queen.

Hlehle was eating the cake. I put my fork down, I stood up and took my sling bag.

Me: Yakh'okuhle.

She was too focused, eating, she didn't even bother answering me.

I went to pay the bill and went back to the table.

Me: Yakh'okuhle!!! She jumped and fell from her chair. I helped her up and walked out.

Dr: Mbali!!! Mbali!!! Said the doctor as he was running behind us.

Me: What?

Dr: Can I talk to you? I stopped.

The doctor made his way to us.

Me: What do you want?

Dr: I love you and I mean it. I love you more than anything and everything in this world.

Me: I love Luncumo and I mean it. I love him more than anything and everything in this world.

Dr: Can I take you out? Please.

Me: No.

Dr: At least can I have your number.

Me: It's still a no.

Kuhle's pov.

Ta Lurra's doctor is madly in love with her. She called an Uber that's the first. She doesn't like them. She pulled me and sat me down. The driver was puzzled, she let out a huge sigh.

Her: Good afternoon sir. She and flashed a smile at the driver. The driver was confused.

Him: Afternoon mam. He said and smiled back.

Her: How are you feeling today? She asked like she knew the guy.

Him: Am good mam. How are you?

Her: Am good sir. Thank you.

Him: Why are you nice to me? Everyone treats me like am some trash, no one ever smiles at me all.

Her: Mom thought to me flash a smile at a stranger. It might be the only smile he gets.

Him: That's the only smile I get.

Her: So what did you study?

Him: I want to do medicine. But it's hard my mom is a drug addict. Ever since my aunt passed away my life went from good to bad. She also hates me for being gay. I support me and my other siblings with the money. At this point am willing to get a second job. I have to buy clothes, food and pay the rent.

Her: That's bad. You know being gay is not a sin. Don't hide yourself. Let people know. People will always talk.

Him: Will do.

He dropped us and I paid. Mbali gave him R300.

She's such a softie but I love her. She walked in and threw herself on the couch. My phone rang it was one of my ex rich boyfriends. He said he wanted me to come over blah blah blah. I dropped the call. Am trying to live a normal life.

Me: Mbali am going to the shop. I shouted and walked to the door.

Her: Sure. Come back safe and alive. She shouted back.

Me: That's not guaranteed.

Her: Hayike suhamba.

- Don't leave.

Me: Am joking.

I closed the door and walked out.

I bought the airtime and I walked home. On my way I met Zuu. He was looking all good. He was hot actually. He came to me and held my hands.

Him: I love you please give me a chance.

Me: A chance? You cheated on me and sent me your sex tape.

Him: Am sorry it was a mistake.

Me: You did it on purpo- he didn't let me finish he kissed me and ran his hands to my butt he grabbed my butt causing me to moan.

Him: Shit!!!

His hand trailed to my breast and I moaned once again.

Him: Can't we take this somewhere?

Me: Your place?

Him: Yeah.

Yakh'okuhle what are you doing. He cheated on you. This is goodbye sex but I miss him. I really do. Am such a fool for loving someone who cheated on me and sent their sex tape

to me. He even told my sister not to tell me. I love him. I hate myself it's really hurting me that I can't be with him. I want to be with him and I don't want to be with him.

Me: Sorry I can't come. I promised Mbali I'll help her with cooking.

Him: No problem.

I walked away slowly. I don't want to let go of him but I have to. Cheating is wrong and unforgivable. But I love him. I can't date him, we can't get back together, he is a cheater.

Zwane's pov.

After they left I rushed to Lunga's house. I need advice I want my queen next to me. I knock once and let myself in. He is watching soccer.

Lunga: How did it go?

Me: It's like she hates me. I feel like am the only one trying to make our relationship work. She's not putting in any effort.

Lunga: Am sure she's not certain about dating you.

Me: You know she still calls Mphati her boyfriend. She is disrespecting me.

Lunga: Don't worry she is all yours.

Me: She doesn't act like it. She must show that she is no longer dating that Kasi boy.

Lunga: Let her digest it then everything will work out.

Me: Maybe. Can I have her number.

Lunga: Andinayo bruhh but am sure Chumani has it.

He called Chumani and Chumani just replied "Ungathi uzondidika. We are not friends. If you want her number ask her. Uyeke undinya." Wow Chumani really hated his brother.

Lunga: Am controlling?

Me: Not really. You are caring and loving..

Lunga: So did she agree to go out with you?

Me: She didn't, she just ran off. I love her, I can't afford to see her with Mphati. I want her to be mine.

Lunga: She is your bro.

We continued chatting then I went home. I went straight to my office. I opened the door and looked around before settling down. I looked around the room, the walls were full of Mbali's pics. Everywhere you looked you saw her pictures. She's so beautiful.

Mbali's pov.

Kuhle walks drained as hell. I rush to her and pull to the couch.

Me: Yintoni mntase?

Hlehle: I saw Zuu. He kissed me and we almost went to his place to have sex.

Me: But?

Her: I made an excuse.

Me: What did you say?

Her: I said I have to help you with cooking.

Me: Good. Follow me. Let's cook.

Her: Am heartbroken and you want me to cook. I whawhu you.

Me: Oksalayo.

She mumbled something and followed me to the kitchen. I sat on the high chair and ate 3 yoghurts.

Her: I love Uzubenathi Solani. But he hurt me I don't think I'll ever be able to forgive him, let alone forget it. It's really messing up with me. I can't be stressed because of dating.

Me: Yakh'okuhle it's up to you, the choice is yours. Quit dating if you don't want to be stressed.

Her: You don't understand Mbali. I want to be with him but he might hurt me again.

What if he is not the right guy for me? What if my Mr Right is out there?

Me: What if he is the right guy? What if Mr Right is right in front of you.

Her: He can't be Mr Right rha.

Me: Kuhle uyamthanda.

- You love him.

Her: Kubuhlungu Mbali!!! Futhi sundika. Suka kwalapha. She shouted.

- It hurts. Stop annoying me. Move!!!

Me: Sukulwa nam. Khange ndophule ntliziyo yakho mna rhaa.

- Don't fight with me. I didn't break your heart.

I clicked my tongue and disposed the yoghurt containers. I walked to my room and played with my phone. Few hours later Kuhle called me saying food is ready. I wore my sleepers and walked to the dinning room. She cooked burnt food.

Nosi: What on hell is this?

Her: Food.

Noks: Burnt food!?

Her: It was a mistake.

Me: Soze kungatshi epheka nge'stress somjolo. Lungisa indaba yokha noZuu khonamanje.

I sang as I disappeared into the passage.

Leaving Hlehle giggling. Dad, Noks and Nosi were breathing fire.

Hlehle barged in my room without knocking.

Her: Ukukunya yevha.

- You are shit. She said smacking the back of my head.

--

Nosi's pov. [It's short]

I fixed my make up and wore my black shiny dress. It had a deep v - line, long sleeves, it showed my cleavage, it was short and my black knee length boots. So today it's one of my rich boyfriend's birthday party. He is

from a rich Zulu family. His name is Sandile Mkhize and he is every girl's dream. He sent me a text saying his outside. I took my bag and went out. I hugged him and got in his car. I looked at him. Admiring his beauty. He looks like Sis' Noluthando, no, he is Noluthando walking. It's like she woke up from the dead. But come back in a male's body.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 22.



Mbali's pov.



I was going to my Kuhle's room when I heard Mr Mandoyi shouting. I stood by the door and listened.

Mr M: He's going to be released in 3 years time. He will want his life back. Am talking about his 17 years old daughter, 18 years old daughter, 22 years old son and his wife. He will want his house and money back.

Caller:xxxxxxx.

Mr M: I stole his life. I put him in jail cause I wanted everything he had.

Caller:xxxxxxx.

Mr M: Can't you do something to keep him in prison for the next 5 years or so?

Caller:xxxxxxx.

Mr M: Do something.

Caller:xxxxxxx.

Mr M: Xabiso Mbebe do something. You are rich you have all the power.

Xabiso Mbebe is Vuyolwam's dad. I don't know how they know each but it's really deep.

Caller:xxxxxxx.

Mr M: We framed him for murder for fuck sake. Don't you think he'll come back to avenge himself? I was shocked to hear this. He framed someone for murder but who did he kill.

Caller:xxxxxxx.

Mr M: My point exactly.

Voice: Are you eavesdropping? Says a drunk voice behind me. Arghh its Nosipho.

Me: Uhm...ehhh.

Her: It doesn't matter sucker.

She says walking to her room.

I walk to Hlehle's room. I jump on top of the bed. She screams in frustration.

Me: Scream all you want. It doesn't change the fact that you are late for school and I also have something to share with you.

Her: You are pregnant? You are moving to your backroom? You broke your virginity? You won lotto?

I laughed and jumped out of bed.

Me: Your guesses are so wrong.

Her: Am going to take a bath you lame ass.

Me: Am going to school am late bro.

Her: What's the time?

Me: It's almost 07:34. I woke up late, I actually forgot to charge my phone. I woke up by luck.

Her: Am not even bathing. Am wiping bro.

She ran to the bathroom.

I ran to my room and ran out. I got to school and the gates were already closed. I had to beg the guard.

Me: Ndiyakucela torho. Jonga I'll owe you big time.

Him: Sorry Mam I can't let you in.

Me: Bhuti ndihlala ne'stepmother nabantwana bakhe ababini and kufuneke ndibenzele yonkinto. Ndiyabuvusa ek'seni, ndebenzela breakfast, ndi'iron impahla zabo, ndihlamba izitya, ndenza homeworks zabo, ndipolisha izihlangu zabo, ndodlula ibhedi zabo

ndithetha ngento endizenzayo before ndize es'kolweni. Utatam akandilweli xa bendihlukemeza uyabancedisa and my mom passed away when I was 14. You know I didn't even have breakfast or supper. Then after school I have to go to work.

Ndiyakucela bhuti. I have to write a test and you know Mr Mabunda doesn't take shit from anyone. Am trying to build a bright future for myself. Am only 17 and I've been to hell and back. Don't you want to see a black child succeed?

My aunt can't take me to live with her. She works as a journalist and she is married plus they are renting flats in Midrand. She can't afford living with a child who has a lot of needs. Yibanentliziyo Bhuti.

- I live with my stepmom and her 2 kids and I have to do everything for them. I wake them up in the morning, i make them breakfast, I iron their clothes. My father doesn't defend

me and mom passed away when I was 14.....

Am crying even the students next to me.

Me: Bhuti have you ever been body shamed by the people who are meant to love you?

Have your own father treated you like a maid in your mom's house. Am schooling and working so that next year I can pay for my tuition fees or get a bursary. Please let me through. I really want to become a lawyer and prove my dad that am worth something. Maybe he will start loving and treat me like his daughter.

Him: You can come in.

He says opening the gate for me and other students who were late including Luvo.

Me: Enkosi.

I say standing up from the ground since I was kneeling down and wipe my tears.

Am sobbing and crying. Luvo calmed me down.

We rush to class and Mr Mabunda said we

will sit detention and he also hit us with the duster. I thought there was rule saying "no hitting kids at school".

It was now break time and I was chilling with my Bro's. Then some girl came to us it looked like she was in Grade 8.

Her: Molweni.

- Hello.

Wam: Yintoni wanyaba uMamakho ukuselise i'caster oil?

- Why are you weak, your mother made you drink caster oil?

Lonke: Wase wano molweni obonda mpoo.

- You have an ice cold hello.

Chuma: Hayi sisi bulisa kakuhle. Ungaphinde usele into yohambisa usiza es'kolweni cause ikugeda amandla. You are mandla-less right now. Wase wa'ice cold umntana. Yiba bubbly umncinci for unyaba. Wangathi ngumakhulu ogulela ukufa.

- Greet us properly. Never drink castor oil before coming to school cause it finishes your energy. You are powerless right now. You are ice cold. Be bubbly, you are too young to be this weak. You look like a granny whose about to die.

Me: Khuzekani zinja.

- Be stoppable dogs.

Lonke: Hayi naye makabonise umdla.

Makabonise ngumntana ayeke ubungiminyabi.

- She must show interest. She must show she's a kid.

I wanted to laugh but the situation didn't allow me to.

Me: Ungabohoyi lholho. Abekho right apha entloko. Ubusithini ker mhimhi?

- Don't mind them. They are mentally unstable. What were you saying?

Boys: Akanyabe.

- She's weak.

Her: Bhut' Lurra asked me to call you. She is shaking. I guess they scared her.

Wam: Yintoni watatazela? Uva lenggele ubuze nayo? Susigodilisa kushushu.

- Why are you shaking? You are feeling the coldness you brought? Don't make us cold while it's hot.

Chuma: Ingathi akangomnta tuu. Yerr Unyabile mtshana.

- Its like she's not a kid at all. Yerr you are weak.

Me: Mxelele ndiyeza.

- Tell him am coming.

She walked away. I burst laughing my brothers joined me I stopped laughing and looked at them.

Me: Iworse nani nivele nibeyi cold front xa kufuneka nishelile.

- It's worse you guys become a cold front when you have to ask girls out.

They frowned. I stood up and walked to Lurra. He gave me his best smile causing me to blush.

Him: Bhabha.

Me: Mnt'wam.

I put my hands through the fence he also reached out.

Him: U'right? He asked in a concerned tone.

Me: Ndiright wena?

Him: Ha.a Bhabha don't lie to me I saw your video.

Me: My video?

Him: The one you were crying and begging the security to let you in.

Me: I remember begging the security and crying but I know nothing about the video.

He took out his phone and gave it to me.

Me: Luncumo ithini ipassword?

Him: Isiphosenkosi Bhabha.

Me: Hayibo ipassword engaka Ncumo.

Him: Ngu Isiphosenkosi qha sthandwa sam.

I opened his phone and am the wallpaper, am sleeping my lips are pouted. I clicked on the video. I watched it and cried, I was laughing and crying.

Him: Sukhula Bhabha, uzondikhalisa mnt'wam.
He was teary.

I blushed and he wiped my tears.

Him: Yiza ndincamise bhabha.

Me: Through the fence? He smiled and nodded.

I moved close and pouted my lips. We kissed through the fence and he moved back.

Him: We must never bhabha. Utyile?

Me: Not really.

Him: Yitya mnt'wam.

He passed me a plastic it had food.

Me: Enkosi, enkosi, enkosi.

He laughed.

Him: Yitya sthandwa sam.

I ate then remembered what doc did.

Me: Luncumo.

Him: Ginya then uthethe. I swallowed then drank my juice.

Me: uDr Zwa-

The bell rang.

Me: Uze after school. I said pecking his lips through the fence.

Him: Ndiyakuthanda bhabha.

Me: The feeling is mutual. I said as I ran away.

When I walked to class Luvo threw my bag at me. Uyaqeqa yazi lomfana.

It was now after school. Am walking with my brothers. My brothers are so annoying and loving.

Wam: Yazi I love Imibongo.

We coughed and choked on our saliva. We all turned to look at him.

Lonke: Noba ndive umoya bomontase.

Me: Khange ndizihlambe kakuhle indlebe sozuve.

Chuma: If am dreaming please don't wake me up.

Wam: Am serious.

Me: Rather catch flue than feelings.

Wam: Ayikwazi ubanguwe and soze ibenguwe lo othetha lonto.

Lonke: Yima, you just said you have feelings for Imibongo.

Chuma: That's brand new from the bottle store.

Wam: Mbali I need your advice.

Me: Shoot.

Wam: I need tips on how to impress girls.

Me: Let's make a deal.

He lifts his left eyebrow up.

Me: I plan everything and you pay me.

Him: It's a done deal.

Kwanda's pov.

I was on my way to school as usual. Today my sister couldn't take me to school so I had to walk. I was walking to the bus stop where I could catch a taxi. Two guys from my hood came by. I was seated on the rocks. They are know as Lebo and Amo. They are hot sotho guys from rich families.

Amo: Kwanda.

Me: Hey.

Amo: How are you?

Me: Am good, thanks for asking and yourself?

Amo: We are good, right.

Lebo: Yeah, can we get this over and done with.

They pulled me to the nearest bush.

Me: What's going on?

Lebo: Start acting like a real man not this shit you are. He said taking of his belt. I screamed it didn't matter cause no one cared.

Amo pulled my pants down. Ewe I do love sex but I don't like this. They flipped me so I could lay on my stomach, I tried fighting that didn't matter. They took turns and I was screaming the entire time. My cries were not heard only because am gay. A lot of people pass by this bush to broad taxis but none of them bothered helping. As they were taking turns I thought of something really quick.

Me: Am HIV positive. I shouted as I was crying.

Lebo: Why didn't you fucken tell us? He shouted they zipped their pants. They beat to pulp because I am gay. I looked for phone in my blazer and called my dad and he didn't pick up. I called my mom.

Her: Didn't I say leave me alone you gay thing.

Me: Mom I've been raped.

Her: Wow, I didn't think the boys would do the job so quick, am sure you've come back

to your senses. I wailed harder. My own mom had me rapped. I contacted my dad again and he answered.

Him: My angel.

Me: Dad I've been raped.

Him: What? Where are you?

Me: At the stop.

Him: The one you use for taxis?

Me: Yes. I dropped the call.

I hated myself. I hate my mom. I hate Amo & Lebo.

Dad took me to the doctor. They took a rape kit.

I went home I didn't want to stay at the hospital I no longer felt safe with all the man doctors around.

Am crying on my dad's chest and he is shushing me. The door flew open my sister came in running. She hugged me so tight like it was her last time seeing me. Am so lucky to have her and dad in my life. I cried till I was

satisfied. I didn't feel like crying anymore I never thought my own mom could do such to her own kid. My phone starting beeping. It was annoying I ended up checking what's going on. It was a video of me being raped and a video of Mbali crying. People were throwing insults. They called us attention seeking whores. Some were feeling Mbali's pain but no one felt my cries. I was begging them to stop and the fact that I said am HIV positive had a lot of people going crazy. Some of my exes were insulting and shaming me. I threw my phone across the wall and started crying. I've been shamed for being gay and I didn't care but this is too much. I cried myself to sleep.

Mbali's pov.

I was late for my shift and Lurra was waiting for me to finish changing so we could go. He

was going grocery shopping and I was going to work. I took my phone out if the charge and ran out. I was already in my work uniform. We walked to the taxi rank taking videos and pictures.

Lurra left me at the shop and he went for his grocery shopping. I worked till my shift was over. I sat on the high chairs while Lwam was sweeping the floor. I turned my phone on and a lot of notifications came in. I checked some of them. Everyone was talking about my video. I just scrolled till something caught my eye.

"A gay was rapped and people are busy making fun about. Whoever posted the video was wrong and he must be sued. Heal soon. Am sure Ma Lurra will help you get through this" and I commented "hayibo what does this have anything to do with me Qhawe?" Some girl mentioned me on a post. I checked

it was video of Kwanda being rapped. His cries were doing the most.

The necklace guy walked in and he was wearing the necklace, that day he was not wearing it. I was wearing the same necklace along with the one Lurra got me. Lwam attended him and he came to me.

Him: Sawubona.

- Hello.

Me: Yebo.

- Hey.

Him: Konke kuhamba kahle sisi?

- Is everything okay?

Me: Ufuna no Ma. Ngathi uvuke ekufuni.

- You look like my mom. It's like she woke up from the dead.

Him: Angifani noMawakho sisi.

- I don't look like your mom.

Me: Angihlanyi bhuti ngiyazi ukuthi ngikhuluma ngani.

Am not crazy. I know what am talking about.

He nodded.

Him: Manje ukhalelani?

- Why are you crying.

Me: Umngani wami banyukubeze ngoko ncatshi.

- My friend was sexually assaulted.

Him: Ngiyaxolisa. Awufuni ngikuphe u'lift?

- Sorry. Don't you need a lift.

I nodded and wiped my tears. I took my bag we walked out.

Me: You are younger version of my mom.

Him: Are you obsessed or something?

Me: Am not obsessed I know what am talking about. I know what Noluthando looked like.

He drove me to Kwanda's house.

I knocked Kwanda's dad opened I attacked him with a hug. I cried. I wish my father could be like him. I hugged him tighter am crying cause I miss my dad and I feel Kwanda's pain.

He closed the door and led me to Kwanda's room.

Me: Kwanda.

Him: Mbali.

Me: Please open the door.

I heard movement and the door handle went down. He hugged me for dear life and cried. I cried with him. I hope he recovers. I want my Kay back.

Sim's pov.

Staying with Nkosi is starting to bore me. I mean he has his own place and his busy suffocating my apartment. Yerr i can't do my work in peace. Am exhausted coming back from work. I kick my heels off and sleep on the couch. Am woken up by someone shouting and hitting tables.

Nkosi: Simthandile!!!

Me: What!?

Nkosi: You haven't cooked. What am I suppose to eat.

Me: You have your own hands Nkosinathi.

Nkosi: Am married and your job as wife is to cook for your husband.

Me: We are not married yet.

Nkosi: I paid lobola for you and you are busy whoring around.

Me: You can take your lobola back anytime.

Nkosi: How is your little journalism job going to pay my money?

Me: I don't know but I'll will pay back Nkosinathi.

Nkosi: Are you breaking up with me?

Me: Am not breaking up with you but am telling you if you keep nagging we will call it quits.

Nkosi: Call it quits? So you can be with your boyfriends?

Me: Boyfriends? What boyfriends are you talking about? Cause you are the one with hoes.

Nkosi: Andiva? You are the one cheating on me and you are telling me about hoes.

Me: Ewe am talking about injakazi zakho.

Pamela? Yolanda? Nosiphondiwe?

Nkosi: Have you been going through my phone?

Me: Yewethu I was not going through your phone. Even if I went through your phone there's nothing wrong with that.

Nkosi: There is something wrong with that.

Me: What's wrong with that cause I don't see a problem.

Nkosi: It's private.

Me: Ohh my phone is not private? You get to search my phone and you can use my phone anytime. You know my password but I don't know yours.

Nkosi: I don't care. Am a man it's my right to know what's in your phone.

Me: Am not gonna argue with you. I say walking to my room.

I bang the door and head straight to the en-suit. I strip naked and open the shower. The water falls on my skin. It's so warm. The shower door opens. Nkosi walks in angry as hell.

Nkosi: You don't walk away when am talking to you.

I didn't respond.

Nkosi: Am talking to you!!! Are you cheating on me?

Me: Just because you are cheating it doesn't mean am also cheating.

Nkosi: You are one disrespectful bitch.

Me: Uzothi bitch phaa kuYolanda not apha kum.

I said walking out the shower. He pulled me by my hair. I fell and my head hit the corner of the bathtub.

Insert 23.



Sim's pov.



I heard someone calling my name from a very far distance. The voice was getting closer and closer. My eyes were have but I managed to open them a little. Someone was flashing their hands in front of my eyes. I opened my eyes and saw Nkosinathi's friend he is a doctor.

Dr: She's awake!!! He shouted and Nkosi came in running.

The doc did a check up and left some medicine. They bro hugged and he left. Nkosi came and held my hand.

Nkosi: Am sorry Simthandile I didn't mean to do it was a mistake. I can't see myself without you. Ndicele undixolele.

- Please forgive me.

Me: You can't keep on saying sorry each and everytime you hurt me. Sorry doesn't cut it.

Nkosi: Am sorry I just can't imagine my life without you. It always makes me angry thinking that I'll have to live without you. I love you Simthandile. It was a mistake. Please give me a chance.

Me: I can't Nkosi this is too much.

Him: I will seek medical help. I'll do everything you want me to do Mamnune even if it means seeing a shrink. Just don't leave me.

Me: You promise.

Him: I promise. I never loved anyone like I loved you. You are my everything. I'll seek help. I need help and I want to get help with you on my side. Please give me a chance.

Me: And this is your last chance.

He hugged me so tight.

Him: Ndiyabulela Mamnune. Soze ndikuphoxe.

- Thank you. I won't disappoint you.

He kissed my forehead and hugged me tighter.

Me: Nkosinkazi I can't breath. He looked at me and smile.

Me: Let go Nkosinathi Brain Mnkayi.

He slowly let's go. He smiled. I giggled.

Him: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

Him: I'll prepare you a hot bath then I'll make you food, Okay?

He disappeared to the bathroom and came back a few minutes later. He picked me up

and took me to the bathroom. I took off my gown and got in.

I lotioned and wore my PJs. I went to the living room.

Him: So when are you dress shopping?

Me: Next week Sunday but this Saturday I'll look for the venue.

Him: What can I do?

Me: Can you check whose coming and not coming? We need to know how many people are we catering for.

Him: No problem babe. How many bridesmaids do you have?

Me: 4 girls and 1 gay. Ohh and he doesn't have a date.

Him: Am sure he'll get it in time.

Me: No, you'll look for the date.

Him: What!?

Me: Uyalwa?

- Are you fighting?

Him: Now I'll do it. Anything for my baby.

Mbali's pov.

I've been cooped up in Kwanda's room. He doesn't want to go out. I don't understand how a mother could do that to her own child. I understand he hates him but this is pure evilness. Ever since Kwanda came out of the closet his mom never spoke to him.

Kwanda: How am I going to face everyone?

Me: I don't know but I know we will overcome this. I'll be with you every step of the way.

Kwanda: Am such a disgrace. I hate myself Mbaliyothando. How could my own mom do this to me. I hate her.

Me: I know you do but she's still your mom. I also hate my dad but we can't choose family. You cut off toxic family members.

Kay: This is too much to handle I can't deal. Am trending. People are making fun of me.

Me: Am sorry. Are you hungry?

Kay: Am not hungry. I don't know why my mom would do that. She carried me in her womb for 9 months and now she is doing this to me. She was suppose to cherish me. From now on I no longer have a mom. She is dead to me.

Me: Don't worry everything will be okay. You will heal.

Kay: When? I want to heal now.

Me: Healing takes time Kwanda. You are stronger than you think and we'll overcome this.

Kay: Why are you helping me? Why aren't you laughing like everyone else? You want to hurt me from inside?

Me: I would never Kwanda you are my everything. I would never hurt you. Some of us are only trying to help you.

Kay: How am I suppose to know. Everyone is fake. Why are you even here?

Me: Am here because you are my friend and I love you. I won't let you suffer on your own.

Kay: Just get out!!!

Me: Kwanda am not leaving you alone.

Kay: Just get out!!! I don't want to see you or anyone else for that matter. Don't ever come back.

Me: Please Kay le-

Kay: Just leave me the fuck alone!!!

Me: I can't leave you while you are like this.

Kay: Hamba Mbali!!

- Leave.

I wiped my tears and stood up. I wore my shoes and walked out. I closed the door and sighed. I looked up so I could stop my tears. Kwanda's dad was starrng into blank space.

K's dad: I was making you food.

Me: No, thank you.

K's dad: Are you leaving?

Me: Yes, can you please tell Kwanda to call me when he feels like talking. He just kicked me out.

K's dad: I will call you.

Me: Bye.

Him: Wait. Zimasa can you please take Mbali home.

Masa: Am coming.

She drove me home in complete silence. I was looking out the window trying my best not to cry.

She left me at the gate. I walked in and the place was dirty. Clothes scattered everywhere, dirty plates, bottles of alcohol and pizza boxes. The house reeked of weed. I walked to Hlehle's room. She was on the floor drunk as hell. I went to Nosi's room she was having sex. I froze and excused myself. I went to my room. I opened it was clean. I thought they also trashed my room. I just

threw myself on the and started crying. I sent Luncumo a "Goodnight" text and slept. The door flew open and i jumped and sat straight. Noks walked in with dad. They were mad as hell.

Me: What's wrong!?

Him: You don't respect us. You are busy having sex with older guys at my house.

Me: What!?

Her: Nywathi my left foot. Wake up and clean the bloody house.

Me: But I didn't do anything.

Him: Are back chatting? You are so disrespectful. Clean the bloody house before I whip you.

Her: Did you ask for permission to host the party?

Me: I didn't because I didn't host any party.

Him: Mbaliyothando Mandoyi clean my house.

Me: Can I at least do it tomorrow?

Her: Do it now and stop shitting on me.

Me: But it's 11pm and I can't clean at this time.

Dad went out and came back with a whip. I jumped out of the bed.

I did all the chores. I hate how am being treated. I made sure to clean as fast as possible so I could so I have enough sleep. After cleaning I went straight to bed.

•morning•

I woke early as possible. I made breakfast and left it on the table. I took a bath and wore my school uniform. I packed my books. I took 4 yoghurts and made my way out. I don't want to see any of them. I made my way to school. I was early I went to class and studied. I just couldn't keep Kwanda out of my mind. The boys walked in.

Me: Bafana the boys.

Lonke: Small.

Wam: You look like shit Mancane.

Me: That's because Kuhle and Nosipho fucked me over and Kwanda is shutting me out.

Lonke: Give Kwanda some time. Am sure he will come through. He needs time.

Me: It's frustrating Lulo he even kicked me out of his room.

Wam: Stop acting miserable and he'll will heal. indoda ayikhali.

- Men dont cry.

Lonke always gives us advice. I'd say he is the smartest and most caring. He thinks like an adult and he plans ahead. He always thinks of the future. Sometimes it's annoying.

Wam doesn't really care and he is the last person I'd ask advise from. He is a joker. He already makes you laugh when you are miserable. He is very good in maths.

Chuma worries a lot. He doesn't trust easily one would swear he is insecure. He is overprotective and he doesn't like arguing.

If he said something he done whatever you say afterwards doesn't matter.

Chusta: What did Nosi and Hlehle do?

Me: They had a party. There were dishes, clothes, alcohol bottles and pizza boxes everywhere and Mr & Mrs Mandoyi made me clean at 11pm.

Wam: One of those days you should wipe the floor with them. Yerr they aren't feeling you.

Me: I swear I wanted to eat them alive.

Wam: Ngewubankunkuthe babangamathambo.

Lonke: You love fighting.

Wam: They are angering me. I am so angry.

Me: You need a cape so you can be super angry.

They laughed.

Chusta: Are you fine princess?

Me: Am mad as hell.

Wam: Hayibo Madea.

We laughed. With wam it's never a dull moment.

Me: I think I just saw Imibongo.

Wam: Uphi? He said as he looked around.

We burst out laughing.

Lonke: Idyan ayicatchi.

Chusta: Don't catch sbali. You know these women can be like roaches.

Wam: Yerr ngathi nguNizole akazolanga tuu.

- Just like Nizole she is not quite at all.

Chusta: Ngathi ndingamcisha.

- I wish I could kill her.

Lonke: Mhle qha akohlukanga kwimpukane. I wish she was beautiful and quit.

My brothers kept on talking about Nizole i got bored and went to class.

It was now after school am not giving up on Kwanda so I take a taxi to his house. I knocked and Masa opened.

Her: Hey baby.

Me: Hi is Kwanda here.

Her: Yeah, he hasn't left his room since yesterday.

Me: Can I talk to him?

Her: Sure you can come in.

I knocked and knocked Kay didn't open.

Me: Am sure he is hungry can you please make him food.

Her: Okay sthandwa.

Me: Kwanda vula!!! I banged the door.

Masa came back with food.

Me: Don't you have spare keys?

Her: Let me call dad.

She left me at the door and she came back with the keys. She left me I opened the room was stuffy. I went to the bathroom and Kwanda was on the floor bleeding.

Me: Zimasa!! Zimasa!!! Zimasa!!! She came in running.

Her: Omg.

Me: Kay wake up please don't leave me. I need you. Kwanda wake up!!! Kwanda!!! I screamed.

I was screaming and crying. I can't lose him.
Masa came back with paramedics.

They left us behind. We drove behind them.
The car was flying I swear I saw death
hovering over me. Masa almost hit a truck
lucky us she stopped and took a deep breath.
We got to the hospital right after the
paramedics. We followed behind them.

Paramedic: Mam you cannot go in.

Masa: That's my brother.

Paramedic: We know mam but you can't come
in.

Me: He needs us.

Paramedic: Please wait here mam. The
doctors will talk to you.

Masa: I must wait here while my brother is
slowly dying.

Paramedic: The doctors will help him.

We nodded and sat down. He walked away.

Kay's dad walked in. You could see how
worried he was. He was in pain. He hugged

Zimasa and she cried in her father's chest. I smiled faintly. I lied on the bench facing the roof. Life is so annoying. I sometimes regret being alive.

I think I fell asleep cause I was woken by Kay's dad. He gave me food and a blanket. I covered myself.

A female doc came to us. We all jumped from our sits.

Kay's dad: How's my son?

Dr: Are you Kwanda Mgidi's dad?

Kay's dad: Yes mam.

Dr: Your son lost a lot of blood.

Masa: I can donate.

Dr: You can come tommorow.

The doctor walked away and Zimasa sighed. I just wish she is a match cause we can't lose Kay. I left them and went home. I will see them tommorow.

I got home and Hlehle was cooking. She smiled. I just looked at her and said nothing.

Her: What's wrong?

Me: Mxm.

Her: Are you okay?

Me: Dont act like you care.

Her: Am not acting I care.

Me: Kwanda is in hospital fighting for his life and he was raped yesterday. A video of him is trending.

She gasped.

Me: You and Nosi threw a party. Guess what? Your mom and dad woke me up at 11pm. I slept at 3am because of you two. While you were peacefully sleeping.

Insert 24.



Mbali's pov.



None of us were a match. We've been begging Kay's mom to donate blood but she doesn't care. Her words are " I won't save a useless gay. 2 full weeks we are busy begging her and she doesn't give a shit a part of me really hates her but I have to beg her for Kay's sake. Am even thinking of asking her children. Am sure they are not heartless as her. I don't even know how am going to get their names or pictures. I really hate the lady. Who does that to her own son. Zimasa is crying none stop. I think am about to fail a grade for the first time. I applied Vaseline on my lips and took my phone.

Me: Kuhle let's go.

Her: Am coming.

She looked like shit. She had puffy eyes and a red nose.

Me: Am sick and tired of begging that women. She is so heartless. I hate her flat ass.

Her: Wait you hate someone? Wow if you hate Kay's mom it means she is really bad.

Me: What kind of a mom does that. I just wanna rip her apart.

She laughed.

Her: She has it bad. Since when do you want to murder someone.

Me: Since i met that hater of woman. I wish the earth could swallow her up along with dad and Sis Noks.

Her: I can't believe you hate someone.

Kwanda's mom really angered you.

Me: I just wish she could stop being selfish and consider helping her son.

Her: She's annoying and heartless. I really hate her.

Me: You haven't even meet the women yet you hate her.

Her: The way you describe her makes me hate her.

Me: I wonder how does her husband cope with a snob she is too much.

Her: She is kind to her husband.

Me: Yeah otherwise she can be bitchy.

We climbed of the taxi and rang the bell. A light skinned nigga opened. We went in.

Me: Is Sis Xolelwa here?

Him: Yeah she is here.

Me: Can you please call her. It's really important. I said in a pleading voice.

Him: Take a seat I'll call her.

We sat down. Kuhle stood up and walked around.

Her: This house looks like paradise.

Me: Mxmmm this house feels like hell.

Her: Just because you don't get along with the owner you hate this house.

Me: Ewe I hate it along with the owner. The house is nice but the owner makes it feel like hell.

She laughed.

Her: You are such a hater. These pillows are so soft. She said holding a white fluffy pillow.

Kwanda's mom came downstairs in her PJs.

Kay's mom: You don't give up now do you?

Me: Giving up is not an option.

Her: You are so brave. You sound like you are in a court room.

I giggled.

Kay's mom: You have something funny to say Missy?

Her: No Mam.

The guy came with coffee and cakes.

Kay's mom: Mike you can't serve low lives in my expensive plates and cups.

Me: We are fine Mike. Right Kuhle.

Her: N-

Me: Thank you Mike.

Kay's mom: What do you want young lady?
She asked irritated.

Me: Am only asking you for one thing and one thing only. Please donate blood for your son.

Kay's mom: I won't donate blood for that embarrassment. I should have aborted him while I had the chance. Now he is a nuisance to my presence.

Me: Mom just a little blood it won't hurt. Please mam. Just give your son a second chance in life.

Kay's mom: I'd rather have him dead than alive. He is such a disgrace.

Her: Mam can you have a heart and help your dying son.

Me: I promise after you donate blood he will never ever bother you. I promise to keep him away from you.

Kay's mom: I said no. I won't donate any blood. He stopped being my son the day he told me he is gay. I only have two sons. Nothing more nothing less.

Me: Mam is there anything I can do to change your mind.

Her: Another court stunt. You are killing this.
She whispered in close to my ear.

I jumped from the "shhb shhnb" sounds.

Kay's mom: There's nothing you can do to change my mind.

Me: Are you sure Mam. I will do anything and everything to save my Kay's life.

Kay's mom: I have everything I want and need so I don't need anything from low lives like you.

Her: Arrogant bitch. She said in a low tone and her jaw clenched and unclenched.

Kay's mom: Can you leave my house.

Her: With pleasure. She stood up and walked away.

Me: Please help mam. We are really desperate.

Kay's mom: Get out.

I stood up and walked out. Andisamonyanyi.

We walked out the gate and heard someone calling us.

We stopped and two guys approached us. It was the light skinned guy.

Guy: We heard you talking about donating blood for moms son. Is he doing okay?

Me: He is not okay. He really needs blood and we are running out of time.

Guy2: Where can I do the test?

Me: You'd do that?

Guy2: He is my brother and I would love to have a bond with him.

Me: Do you think your mom would agree.

Guy2: I don't care. Am 24 and I can make my own choices. I'd do anything and everything to save my brother. I don't know him but he is my brother.

I attacked him with a hug.

Her: Thank you so much.

Guy: Don't thank him he is our brother.

Me: We will forever be grateful. I said letting go of him. Am really happy I'll have my Kay back.

One would swear the sons weren't raised by a beast.

Me: Hlehle can you tell them everything. Am going to work.

Her: Sure I'll fill them in.

I left them standing.

I got to work Lwam was not working today.

Am so going to be bored. I was humming and dancing. I've been mopping around for the past 2 weeks but am really good. I have a little bit of hope. I can't wait for my shift to end and break the news to Kay's family.

Mam' Lindi: You are even humming. What's going on?

Me: Nothing.

Mam'Lindi: Sit down and tell me everything.

Me: Am working.

Mam'Lindi: Am the boss. Sit down.

I sat on the high chairs.

Mam'Lindi: Start talking.

Me: Well my friend's brothers decided to donate blood without their mom's knowledge. I begged that woman kanti Kay's brothers didn't mind helping.

Mam'Lindi: I thought you had something juicy to share kanti no.

Me: This is juicy Mam'Lindi.

Mam'Lindi: Stop calling me Mam' Lindi. You are making sound like some old hag.

Me: What do you want me to call you?

Mam'Lindi: Call me Lindi or something sweet.

Me: Yhehake sisi something sweet.

I said that laughing. I took my note book and tray. I left her blabbing. I finished my shift and took my things. I kissed Mam' Lindi's cheek and left. I grew so close to Mam' Lindi. She helps forget my mom. I bought food so I don't have to cook and went home. No one was home. The house is so peaceful it feels like home.

Sim's pov.

Brain just dropped me off at work. He never drives me to work. He is really changing I love the new him already. He is doing much better than I thought he would. I make myself and Cynthia coffee. She's already seated and busy on her laptop. I put the coffee on her table.

Her: Morning and Thank you.

Me: Pleasure. I say pulling my chair and sitting down.

She stands up from her chair and sits on my table.

Me: Move Cynthia!

Her: You are glowing bitch. You have a new man.

Me: No honey.

Her: Simthandile don't tell me you didn't break up with Brain.

Me: I didn't. I love him he loves me besides he is my fiance.

Her: We talked about this. Do you see how many woman die in hands of their abusive partners?

Me: Am I alive and Nkosi won't kill me.

Her: He has manipulated you. Break up with him while you still have time.

Me: Am not breaking up with him. We are doing perfectly fine.

Her: Simmy you moved to your sister's house because of him. Now you don't want to dump him.

Me: I no longer want to do it.

Her: How many times do you want to see doctors. He hits you like a punching bag or something. This is not love Simmy. Wake up and smell the coffee he is going to kill you.

Me: He won't kill me. He is getting medical help and his been doing good. We are fine and please stop putting your unnecessary

opinions in my relationship they aren't needed.

Her: Don't bite my head am only trying to help you.

Me: Stop trying to help cause we don't need your help.

Her: You need help. I don't know whose help you need but you need help. I hope you see the light before it's too late.

Me: Are you done?

Her: No am not done. Simmy do you have a de-

Me: I heard you. Bye!

She stood up and walked to her desk.

I was packing up to leave then Nkosi walked in carrying flowers and chocolate. I blushed he made his my to me.

Him: Babe.

He kissed my cheek and hugged me.

Me: My love.

Him: How are you?

Me: Am good and you?

Him: Am fine. These are for you.

Me: Who else would they be for?

He smirked.

Him: Let's go I have a surprise for you. He says taking my stuff from the table.

Me: Bye Cynthia!

Her: Whatever.

I laughed and walked to Nkosi's car. Nkosi's opened the door for me I got in and he closed the door then jogged to his side.

He drove to nearby rooftop. We went up and he planned a picnic for us.

Insert 25



Mbali's pov.



Kwanda's brother did the test so we are still waiting for the results. I just pray he is a match we can't lose Kay. On the other hand Kay's mom blames me she thinks its my fault that Kay's brother wants to help him she been swearing at me but I don't care about her. Am trying to finish all my assignments. I've missed out on my school work cause all my attention was on Kay. I need to do research arghh I hate school. Am going to do it at work cause there's free Wi-Fi. I wore my work and took my bags then headed out. Hlehle and her fam are out. So am outside trying to lock this bloody stubborn gate it's difficult to lock and i have an assignment to finish.

Voice: Bhabha. Said a voice behind me it can only be Luncumo.

Me: Babe. I say turning around.

I attacked him with a hug. I missed his scent I've been too busy with Kay I even forgot about him.

Him: Unjani sthandwa sam. He said before kissing my forehead.

Me: Am good wena?

Him: Ndiphilile mnt'wam. Uyaphi?

Me: Am going to do my assignment at work.

Him: Let's do it at my place.

Me: I need Wi-Fi and a printer.

Him: I have Wi-Fi I can't say the same about a printer but I'll make a plan.

Me: Mmmh let me see. I said pretending like am thinking he lift his left eyebrow up and looked at me.

Me: Fineeeeeeeee. I said rolling my eyes.

He laughed and stared at me he tilted his head and smiled I blushed shyly and looked down. He lifted my head up I looked at him then smiled we kissed. He broke the kiss and whispered.

Him: I missed you.

Me: I missed you more and I still miss you.

Him: Masambe sthandwa sam. He said taking my school bag. We went to his house. I sat on the couch and opened my books.

Him: Ulambile?

Me: No, thank you.

He didn't say anything and went out. He came back with a plate full of food and put it in front of me. I didn't have the energy to argue with him so I just stuffed myself up with food. He gave me his laptop so I could type my assignments and he'll print them.

Him: Bhabha stop biting your lip.

I didn't even realize I was doing that. I always do it when am thinking, nervous or scared I bite my lower lip and squint my eyes. I let go of my lower lip he sighs.

As am typing I feel eyes on me I shoot my head up only to be meet by Lurra staring. I look at him for the longest time he is not

backing down so I ended up laughing. I move close to him and peck his lips. He comes back from his imaginary world. He responds and pulls me to sit on him. He was running his hands through my body sending shivers down my spine. As he gently ran his hands through my body I let out a soft moan. The kissed heated up he picked me up I wrapped my legs around his waist. He lies me gently on the bed without breaking the kiss. He got on top of me and kissed my neck I let out a moan he smiled and tore my work top.

Me: That's my work top!

Him: Don't worry you'll get another one. He says tossing it aside with my bra. The next I know my jean is thrown across the room. He moved up and licked my tits then he put one in his mouth and the other one in his hand his other hand went down to my thighs I jumped a little cause his hand was cold. He kissed my mouth and went to my neck and left love

bites going down to my cookie. He kissed my cookie on top of my panty he tore my panty. What's with this guy and tiring clothes. His index finger rubbing in my clit going up and down. He lowers his index finger to the moist and warm part he pushes it in a flinch from pain I catch my breath and he moves in and out. I close my eyes and breath heavily he continues with the in and out.

Him:Let it out.

I let it out. I feel my body shaking. I feel like I've been hit by a wave. Am breathing heavily he sticks his fingers out and licks the other one he comes up to me and kisses my neck I let out a moan he puts his other finger in my mouth. Dammit this shit is so salty I lick my finger clean while moaning. He leaves love bites going down to my cookie he spreads my legs and kisses my inner thighs. He looked at my cookie.

Him: Shit!! He said before kissing my cookie. He buried his head in my cookie he was doing wonders to my cookie. His hands are holding my hips as his eating me. It feels like heaven.

Me: Ahhhhh!! He made circles with his tongue causing me to moan even more. He sucks me for dear life after he came up to me and kissed me. He took out his briefs my eyes popped out.

Him: Don't worry I won't hurt you. He says kissing my neck. I nod repeatedly.

He positions himself at my entrance. He is hitting my cookie with his d*ick.

Me: Ahhhh! Ncumo-

Him: Are you sure you want this? I nod.

Him: Andikuva? I nod again.

Him: Bhabha ufunantoni?

Me: I want yo-

Him: I can't hear you.

Me: I want you to fuck me. I say that so fast and shyly. He chuckled.

Him: What's that? I think ndive umoya.

Me: I want you to fuck me.

He pushes in I jump up it hurts. He tried 3 more times and I keep jumping.

Him: Bhabha I won't hurt you please trust me.

Me: I trust you babe.

He pushes in again I jump but he holds me down like am going to run away. I close my eyes because of the pain.

Him: Please open your eyes.

I open them a little and look at him he smiles.

He tried again but am jumpy. I quickly close my eyes as I feel the pain again.

Him: Keep your eyes on me sthandwa sam.

Me: I can't it hurts.

Him: I'll be gentle. I love you.

I open my eyes.

Me: I lo-

He pushes in hard I scream and he shuts me up with a kiss. He moves in slowly. He

increases his pace. Am not feeling any pleasure this is painful.

Him:

Fuck....you...are...so...mhhh...warm...and...tight.

I close my eyes and tears roll down. Lurra stops moving but his still inside me.

Him: Bhabha please stop crying.

Me: It's painful it really hurts.

Him: Am sorry, I'll be gentle. Please open your eyes. I open my eyes he wiped my tears and blows kisses I smiled. He thrust deep into me. My cookie was on fire. He was talking in foreign languages I think he can speak Chinese.

Me:Mhhhh...ahhhhh... Luncumo!!!!

He groaned and increased his pace.

Him: You....are...so...mhhh... goo...fuck!!!

He pounded me like crazy.

Me: Ahhhhhhhhh! I said tapping his back as he pounded faster than before. He released a deep groan I feel warm liquid filling me he

pulls out and collapse next to me. We are both breathing heavily he caresses my cheeks and kisses my forehead.

Him: I love you.

Me: I love you too.

He gets up and comes back with a towel he wipes me then laid me on his chest.

Kuhle's pov.

Am the one whose been handling the salon since Zimasa is busy with her brother's health. Am closing up it's already late. Mbali also went to work so am going to pass by her work her place. I get there I see the owner and Vuyo I think. I walk up to them and greet her.

Me: Molweni.

Them: Hey.

Me: Is Mbali here?

Owner: She didn't show up she said she will come even if she is not on the rooster but she didn't.

Vuyo: When last did you see her?

Me: Before I went to work and she was the only person left at home.

Owner: Am sure she's fine.

Vuyo: Can you please call her.

I take my phone from my bag and call her.

Her phone rings unanswered. I called till it sent me straight to voicemail.

Me: She's not answering and it's sending me straight to voicemail.

Owner: I hope she's fine wherever she is.

Vuyo: Do you know anyone else who might have an idea of where she is?

Me: Not really. Am sure she's home doing her school work. Let me go.

Them: Bye.

I got home and the gate was locked even the doors. I ran to Mbali's room there's no one. I

call her again with the hope she will answer but nothing am sure she's studying or something. Am sure she changed her plans for today am something.

Mbali's pov.

In my sleep I felt my leg being lifted up. I opened my eyes and Lurra has my legs on top of his shoulders. He inserted himself again and pounded. He was pounding faster and harder I dig my fingers on his back. It's really painful MAYIVALWE ISEX. I was moaning and screaming. I dug my nails even more and held on the sheets. He fastened his pase we came at the same time. He pulled the blankets up and covered us he laid on my breasts and he was still inside me. We fell asleep in that position.

My phone rang but there was this heavy dude on top of me. It was on the couch am trying

to wake Ncumo up he keeps on saying
"mmmhh" or "ohh"

Me: Luncumo!!! He jumped I moaned in pain he
burst out laughing. I was mad at first but I
joined him. He started moving slowly then
pulled out.

Him: Ubusithini?

Me: Uhm nevermind. Actually suka phez'
kwam uyasinda.

He stood up and went to the bathroom i
heard water running he came back.

Him: While you are bathing I'll make the bed.

Me: Am hungry.

He coughed then looked at me.

Me: Ewe am hungry. I said getting out of bed
and I hit the floor immediately he laughed.

My body was sore I was so numb. He picked
me up and went to the bathroom. He made
me sit in the bathtub.

Me: Ouch! Babe! Lurra!

Him: Nyamezala kaloku uyimbokotho mnt'wam.

He said laughing I frowned. He also got in the bathtub and he laid my head on his chest. He helped me bath and picked me up back to his room I sat on the couch butt naked.

Ncumo moved the blanket and threw it on the floor. I saw blood stains on the sheets I panicked and almost peed my self. I tried talking but no words reached my mouth.

Him: Bhabha it's normal for first timers.

Me: Are you sure?

Him: Am 200% sure mnt'wam. I sighed. He pecked my lips then went back to what he was doing.

Me: I was worried.

Him: There's nothing to worry about baby. He finished and gave me his grey T - shirt it was big. He also made me food and we watched TV cartoons to be specific. I packed my books so I could go home since it was late.

Him: Babe are you taking sweatpants or jeans? Noba umuncu uLurra.

Me: Sweatpants.

Him: Is your cookie still burning?

Me: Obviously. I need healing.

Him: Let me help you.

Me: How?

Him: You know muffing helps if your cookie is on fire. Just a little muffing you'll be fine.

Me: Ha.a am not up for sex. I want to finish my assignment in time.

Him: I will finish your assignment.

Me: Thank you!!!

He walked me home with me limping we kissed and I walked in and locked the gate. Kuhle was dishing up. She glared at me and continued.

Her: Why are you limping Nana?

Me: I fell and twisted my ankle. I say walking to my room she follows behind.

Her: Why did you miss work?

Me: I was doing my assignment with Lurra.

Her: The very same assignment you were going to do at work?

Me: Yes that one. MY boyfriend offered to help me.

She went out. I wore my night dress and no panty. I spoke to Lurra and went straight to bed.

Insert 26.



Mbali's pov.



"How's your ankle is it better?" Said Hlehle while she was pulling a cup from the cupboard.

Me: Ankle? I asked confused as ever.

Her: Yes, your ankle.

Me: What ankle?

Her: You fell and twisted your ankle remember?

Me: Ohh my ankle is perfectly fine.

Her: You know I don't buy your I fell and twisted my ankle story?

Me: You know I was not selling my ankle story.

Her: What really happened?

Me: Like I said before I fell and twisted my ankle.

She chuckled. I stood up and went to the lounge.

Her: Ucinga ndidom? She said sitting next to me.

Me: U' clever?

She laughed.

Her: Suba personal. I just wanted to know what happened.

Me: Nothing happened.

Her: Telling the truth won't hurt.

Me: Which truth Yakh' okuhle?

Her: You didn't twist your ankle

Mbaliyothando.

Me: What type of truth do you want? You want me to lie?

Her: Fact remains you didn't twist your ankle. Who knows maybe Bhut' Luncumo hit the coo-

Me: Hayi sundidika Kuhle.

Her: Mandikuyeke. What are we watching?

Me: I'tv utshuba?

She laughed and clapped her hands.

Her: Are you really mad at me cause I want to know what happened. You are my sister and I care about you.

Me: So how are things between you and Ta Zuu?

Her: I haven't seen him around.

Me: I wonder uphi?

Her: Haska andikhathali.

Me: You know he loves you.

Her: Kutsho wena not yena.

Me: Why are you in denial?

Her: Am not in de-

Her phone rang she answered it and passed it to me.

Me: Whose this? I whispered.

Her: Zimasa. She whispered back.

I took it.

Me: Hello.

Masa: Let's meet at the hospital at 12pm.

Me: Why?

Masa: The results are back.

I smiled widely.

Me: Thanks for letting me know. I will be there.

Masa: No problem baby. I love you bye.

Me: I love you too. I said surprised.

She dropped the call. Hlehle looked at me with questioning eyes.

Me: The results are back.

Her: I hope they are a match. Am sure my Saturday will get better.

Me: You know boring Saturdays aren't so bad. They put my soul at ease.

Her: Maybe mine will be better if I had a boyfriend.

Me: Man aren't everything. There's life without man.

Her: Says the girl who has a boyfriend. Am going out maybe I'll get myself a man.

Me: Heal before getting into another relationship.

Her: Am not sick sisi. Nextttttt!!!

She said like those ShopRite annoyed cashier's.

I laughed. Soze aphinde abhadle.

+

I just finished bathing. I wore my clothes and fixed my braids. I looked for my phone and I couldn't find it.

Me: Yakhokuhle!

She came in running.

Her: Yintoni wambi?

We laughed.

Me: iphi i'phone yam?

Her: Andiyazi and i haven't seen it since yesterday morning.

Me: Cela undijongise. I made puppy eyes.

We looked for it everywhere. Tuu ufumaneka i'phone.

Her: When was the last time you saw it?

Me: Ummm at Lurra's house. I say biting my nails.

Her: Sim will flip when she finds out you lost your phone.

Damn!

Me: I didn't lose it.

Her: Where is it then?

Me: Uhm I think I left it on the couch or on top of the bed. Am not sure.

Her: You are brave. How you do you leave your phone with your boyfriend. Anoyiki ulahlwa Mbaliyothando.

Me: Not all of us are flirting.

Her: Everyone flirts no matter what.

Me: Am not everyone. Am Mbaliyothando Mandoyi.

Her: And this is my story.

She said mimicking Grandpa.

He used to tell us stories about him and at the end of the story he would say his name and say "this is my story". He was a great story teller.

We burst out laughing.

Her: Am Qhaweletu Jaxa and this is my story. Yerr that old man was a whole fucken character.

She says laughing.

Me: He had big dreams. He was a role model to me and my brothers. I love him.

Her: Stop whining. Let's go am sure they already opened the results.

We left.

We arrived at the hospital and everybody was already there.

Buchule: Finally you are here. I was growing impatient.

Buchule is Kwanda's older brother.

Me: Sorry we are late.

The doctor came. I was shaking.

What if they are not a match. What's going to happen to Kay? He might die I don't want that for Kay. He can't die can he?

Dr: As well all know the results are back.

Me: Not to be rude can we jump straight to the point.

Everyone nodded in agreement. She sighed and opened the envelope.

Hlehle: Please don't tell us percentages. Just say he is a match or he's not a match. We don't understand medicine language.

Dr: Mr Buchule is not a match.

Masa: Is Mike a match?

Dr: Yes he is a match.

I released a deep sigh.

Mike: Am afraid of needles.

Buchule: Please do it for our brother. You want to meet him right?

Mike: But am afraid of needles. What if I...
I... I-

He said almost running out of breath.

Buchule: He is running out of time Mike.
Please help him. He is our brother.

Mike: I can't the needles might hurt me or something.

I buried my head on my hands. Buchule kept on begging Mike. Tears rolled down.

Kay's dad: Kuzolunga mntanam. He said as he brushed my back.

I smiled faintly and nodded.

He is the best father. I wish he was my father. Kwanda and Zimasa are so lucky to have him.

I looked at Buchule who was begging Mike to donate.

Mike: I'll think about it. If anything happens you all will pay.

Zwane's pov.

I just finished my shift at the hospital. I pack my things and lock my office. I see Mbali walking out with her sister. I rush to them.

Me: Hey wifey. I say taking her hand.

She quickly pulls it back.

Her: What's your problem?

Me: My problem is that my wife is rejecting me.

Her: Dude I am not your fucken wife.

She says calm as ever.

Me: Baby girl you are my wife.

Her: Stop obsessing about me. We won't date. Am not your girl. Get that crap in your stupid head.

How does this chick remain calm. Normally woman would shout. She is chilled she is not shouting.

Me: Don't call me stupid little bitch. I said charging towards her.

She moved back till she hit the wall and her sister jumped in front of me.

Girl: I' bitch ngu-

Her: Myeke Kuhle.

She said pulling her sister and they walked away.

I got in my car and followed them. They went to the taxi rank.

I turned and went to where she stays. I parked four houses away from her house. I took out my phone and went to my gallery. I pressed on the folder that's written Mbali. I

viewed her pics. She's really beautiful I watched videos of her. I took them while she was not looking. I've been stalking her ever since Lunga told me she was mine. Well I know that she's still dating Luncumo and I hate that. She's mine and mine only. I saw them opening the gate at their house. They walked in but Mbali came out and she was met by Luncumo. I can't believe am losing.

Luncumo's pov.

Bhabha called me asking for her phone. It's flat I was playing games on her phone and looking at her pics. She also has a diary well she writes her long term goals and short term goals. She also wrote about how she would love to impress her dad or make her dad love her. She wrote her favorite quotes from songs and African leaders. She also

made reminders of how to spend her time. Most of the things are about school. She's smart and focused. She's been checking modelling agencies she can work with. I guess she wants to be a model.

I quickly packed her books away and put on a T - shirt. I locked and went out. Well mom [Makhulu] is at work she works as a nurse. I went to Bhabha she came out and smiled. Her: Ncumo. She said as she wrapped her hands around my neck.

Me: Bhabha. I pecked her forehead and lips.

Her: Unjani?

Me: Am good wena sthandwa sam.

Her: Well I spent a day without my baby and Hlehle has been investigating why I was limping. How would you feel?

Me: If I was to spend a day without my baby I'd feel very sad and I would be annoyed if someone was to investigate me.

Her: Exactly how I feel. Am never spending another day without my phone I missed my baby so much. Did you bring her?

I laughed who refers to her phone as a her.

Me: So am not your baby but your phone is?

I said moving her from me and touching my chest dramatically. She smiled.

Her: You are my first baby silly. She said pecking my lips.

Me: Mmhh.

Her: Are you mad at me?

She made a sad face. I tried suppressing my laughter but I couldn't. She can't make sad faces. She looked hilarious.

Me: Am not mad at you.

Her: I guess my sad face worked. She said laughing.

We went to my place and she was talking non stop. She's energetic and talks like a 5 year old.

I opened the door. She walked in first and settled on the floor next to the charger.

Me: Mbali your assignment.

She didn't respond.

Me: Isiphosenkosi.

Her: Mmm.

Me: Your assignment.

Her: I will do it now.

Me: I'll take this. I said taking her phone.

Her: Luncumo!

Me: Finish your assignment.

Her: Give me five minutes. I want to check up on my brothers.

Me: You'll do that later.

Her: Pretty please. She made puppy eyes.

I closed my eyes. I will end up saying yes if I could look at her.

Me: Your assignment. You are submitting on Monday and you also have to prepare for a presentation.

Her: I have enough time. Today it's Saturday I'll finish up my assignment then I'll prepare my presentation tomorrow.

Me: So you think you'll memorize your presentation in one day. When are you going to study for your test?

Her: My test is easy Luncumo.

Me: I don't care you are still going to prepare.

Her: Pass me the books.

I passed her school bag. She mumbled something and snatched the bag from me.

Her: Luncumo I deserve a break I've been studying non stop and it's tiring. I was studying last night.

She said biting her nails.

Me: Nyani cause you left your school bag here.

Her: Luncumo it doesn't matter. I studied qha.

She said laughing.

Me: This is your future we are talking about.

Her: I know kodwa I need to chill. I mean today it's Saturday and on Saturdays I don't study.

Me: Things are changing ke. At least spend two hours of your Saturday studying.

Her: That's better. I can't spend the whole Saturday studying. This girl deserves a break.

Me: So what do you suggest we do?

Her: Let's play FIFA.

Me: You can play FIFA?

Her: Hello I have 3 brothers and those dudes live for that ish and am professional player.

Me: You are not as good as me baby.

She laughed and replied "Sizobona".

She took a pillow and laid on the floor with her tummy and put her elbows on the pillow.

We start playing.

Her: See i told you am a professional player.

Me: You are only winning cause I let you win.

Her: Am the best player you've ever met boo.

Me: The match just started. I can still recover.

Her: Only time will tell.

We continued playing.

Her: Wait I need to pee.

Me: The game is almost over.

Her: Luncumo am going to pee myself.

Me: Hold it the match is almost ending.

Her: I can't hold it.

Me: And it's a goal.

She quickly restarted the game and ran to the bathroom. I laughed. She came back running and settled on the floor. We started over and she won.

Her: And the Queen won. What do you have to say?

Me: Am still the best of all times.

Her: You lost I won that says a lot about your professionalism and being the greatest of all times.

Me: You cheated Bhabha.

Her: Eshe I won fair and square Ncumo.

Me: Ohk you won Bhabha.

She laughed and stood up. She gave me the pillow and blanket she was laying on. I put them on the bed nicely. Bhabha jumped on me causing me to fall on the bed.

Our eyes locked. We looked deep into each other's eyes. She smiled and looked away.

Lunga's pov.

I am driving to a strip club where me and my friends normally meet. I park and lock my car. I walk in Zwane and Ntando are already here. I walk to them we bro hug I sit down. We order drinks.

Me: How are things between you and Mbali?

Zwane: She doesn't want to see me.

Ntando: She doesn't love you.

Zwane: I'll make her love me. She is mine and mine only.

Ntando: Did you take your medication?

Zwane: I don't need those pills to survive.
Am not mentally ill.

Me: Ntando leave him the fuck alone.

Ntando: Mbali is in love with Luncumo not him. He needs to accept it.

Zwane: I will do no such. Mbali is mine. Lunga gave her to me.

Ntando: What the actual fuck. Mbali is a human she has rights and feelings.

Me: We don't care. She's my little sister I get to choose for her. If I don't like her boyfriend she's not dating him.

Ntando: This is gonna end badly. Do you think Mbali would choose a physco who doesn't take his meds or the man he loves?

Me: It doesn't matter who she chooses. She will date Zwane.

Ntando: What does Zwane have to offer?

Zwane: I have money, a beautiful house, sport cars and am handsome.

Ntando: That's all?

Me: What's with the questions?

Ntando: Am trying to convince you what you are doing won't work.

Zwane: It will work.

Me: It has to work.

Ntando clicked his tongue and gulped down his glass of whiskey. He walked away.

Ntando thinks he is always right but he is so fucken wrong.

Zwane: I will get myself strippers and get the fuck out of here.

I nodded. He left. Ntando ruined a good day.

Insert 27.





Luncumo's POV.



Bhabha tried standing up from me but I pulled her back she fell on me. I flipped her over.

Her: Luncumo mani!

I tilted my head and smiled at her she blushed. Mhle mnt'wam. She is really uncomfortable cause I am looking her straight in her eyes. Ulaqalaqazi ngathi yibhokhwe elahlekileyo shame umnt'wam. I caressed the side of her cheeks slowly. I run my thumb slowly in her bottom lip she closed her eyes. I pecked her lips repeatedly then kissed her she responded. I undressed her she was left in her undies. I licked her tits while sucking and grabbing them I moved to her tummy I kissed it then went down to her

paradise. I licked her paradise through her panty then started teasing it by moving my finger up and down. The other hand removed her panty i went to her inner thighs and kissed them I moved my tongue up and down licking her paradise.

Her: Lu- ahhhh.

Me: Mhhh?

I slid one finger in then move it up and down followed by the other one I increase my pace. I bury my face in her paradise she holds my head I held her hands down. She wrapped her legs around my neck.

Her: Mmhhh... Aaahhhh.

Me: Fuck!!

She cummed on my face I lick her clean and position myself at her entrance. I try entering she's still tight I try again. She lets out a whimper. I move slowly. She moans in pain and pleasure.

I make love to her delicately. I increase my pace and cum deep inside her. I release a deep groan and collapse next to her. [Am not good ke]

Me: Mnt'wam. I say breathing heavily.

We are both breathing heavily.

Her: Babe.

Me: Are you fine?

Her: Am great wena?

Me: Then we are both good.

I peck her lips and lay her on my chest.

She's drawing circles on my chest.

Me: Bhabha?

Her: Mmm?

Me: I love you.

Her: I love you more. She says smiling at me.

She's always smiling. She's broken but happy. I could see her mouth moving but I didn't hear what she was saying.

Her: Luncumo! Dude you are staring.

Me: Sthandwa sam.

Her: What's wrong, are you fine?

Me: You are beautiful baby.

Her: Thank you but what's bothering you?

Me: Am just staring at my beautiful girlfriend. Umuhle bhabha.

She blushed she's really shy. Samthandi.

Her: Babe I have to go home dad and them are coming back. Am sure they had a blast in Cape Town. I'd love to see the place one day.

Me: They are coming back today?

She nods and hugs me tighter. You could see sadness written all over her face.

Her: I don't enjoy staying with my dad. He has changed too much. I remember he used to beat mom up. He first turned mom into a house wife. Then accused her of cheating then he starting choosing clothes for my mom he bought her rags. Mom went to the cops but they said as a married couple they should resolve their marriage in the bedroom. When she tried telling granny she

used the 'kuyanyamezelwa emendweni mntanam' phrase some women from my village who left their abusive husband's were labelled as 'oomabuya emendweni'. She did everything she could do to leave him but she couldn't cause she knew he was going to "kill me or sexually assault me cause mom didn't satisfy him". He brought different women while she was home he used his salary to support his girlfriend's children we'd spend days without eating then she opened child grant so me & her could have food but dad accused her of being isfebe. Mom was always happy when dad was not around everytime he walked in her face would change from happy to sad but she had to put a huge smile on. If mom cooked something he didn't feel like eating he would throw the food at her. He used to sexually assault her but I was a kid I didn't get what was going on I couldn't help Mommy. There was a time he beat mom to

pulp she landed in hospital his excuse was she got mugged on her way back from work she stayed for the sake of love. Mom tried leaving him when she got discharged but dad always had more power he had a gun he used to tell her if she ever leaves him he would kill all 3 of us. She stayed for me Ncumo when that happened I was about 6 then he changed into a better man but he is back to being a monster. Daddy is a monster that's something I would say everytime he laid his hands on her. He is nothing but a pathetic spineless bastard. He is slowly but surely going back to the old monster dad.

Me: Your dad abused your mom?

I say shocked.

She always talked about how angelic her dad was towards her when mom was still alive but now the story is changing.

Her: It happened 11years ago I was really young. I was 6 years old babe. There was

nothing I could do. I really wanted to help her but I couldn't.

Me: Hey calm down there was nothing you could have done to help her. You were young you didn't understand.

I squeeze her hands. She calms down.

Her: I thought you were judging me or something.

Me: I would never I understand your childhood trauma.

She sighs and tells me more about how her dad treated her mom. It was not really cool but bhabha thinks her dad will change. In my opinion she's not safe at her dad's house and she doesn't want to hear it. She loves him a lot she has faith in him. A monster will always be a monster.

Her: Everytime mommy tried standing up for herself he'd point his gun at me. He always said "I'll kill this bastard child of yours". He is nothing but a coward.

Me: Babe do you feel safe staying with your dad and stepmom?

Her: I don't Ncumo. I always have to look over my shoulder anything can happen in that house.

Well I raised enough money to buy my house and start my own business. I don't know how she's going to take this but I want her to move in with me. I know she's a teenager but she can't keep on staying with them. They think she's their maid they don't respect her. She's depressed because of them. It's funny how she always tell people to 'remove toxic people from their life even if it's family if they are toxic remove them after all water is clear then blood' but she's not practising what she's preaching.

She's not going to agree let me shut the fuck up. Let me give it a try.

Me: Bhabha am not sure if you are going to agree to this or what but uhm....

I take a deep breath.

Me: Am buying a house and I'll soon start my own business I wa-

Her: Oh my gosh congratulations ba...

She says happy as hell but I cut her before she could finish what she wants to say.

Me: Am not done bhabha.

Her: Sorry am just happy for you. At least one of us has exciting news.

Me: I was wondering if you could move in with me.

Her: What? Are you crazy?

She says sitting up straight. I sit up straight and pull her close to me.

Me: Bhabha please. You can't continue living with your dad. You are depressed because of them. You are not safe anything can happen.

Her: No Luncumo am not moving in with you.

My mom would turn in her grave that's disrespecting my late mom. I can't bring shame to the family. Babe people will talk and

my family will definitely be disappointed in me.

Me: What if your mom doesn't turn in her grave instead she celebrates the fact that you finally left your abusive dad the man she couldn't leave. Your family doesn't know what you are going through they don't understand they think your dad is an angel. People will always talk no matter what. Your mental health and safety is a priority not what people are going to say.

Her: I can't Luncumo. It's against culture and it's disrespectful. Please try and understand I can't it's tempting but I can't Luncumo. My dad will be so disappointed in me. My whole family will abandon me. Please try and understand. Besides am still a child I can't do vat n sit.

Me: Am sure culture is against women and children abuse. Culture calls beating kids teaching them respect and women are beaten

so they could listen to they husband's. Women must be thought how to leave toxic relationships and family members but instead they are taught how to respect they husband's and how to last longer in marriage. They are not thought important things but pure bullshit. You know I can get your dad arrested right.

Her: You can't get him arrested Ncumo he is my dad and he loves me. I have to think about my fami-

Me: Your family doesn't care about you and they didn't care about your mom. They are busy living their lives like nothing wrong is happening. If they cared they would have cared enough to take to leave with them but they don't. Did you ever tell them your dad abuses you?

She swallows and responds.

Her: I did but that doesn't matter. He is an elder and my dad. I have to respect him as my dad.

Me: What did they say?

Her: They said I must have disrespected him and that pushed him into beating me. They said it was a punishment for being rude and disrespectful to him and he was teaching me a lesson to never ever disrespect him.

Me: You see this is pure bullshit. Your family is suppose to protect you but they are doing the exact opposite. Just think about this Bhabha don't you think it's wrong.

Her: It's not wrong he is my father he has each and every right to what he is doing. It's African culture.

Me: At least think about it.

Her: There's nothing to think about it's a no. I nod.

They brainwashed her into believing what her dad is doing is right. She stood up and went

to the bathroom I followed behind her. She smiles as I walk in.

Me: Am sorry mnt'wam kodwa andiyithandi lento yenzekayo I can't watch you suffer ndikhona.

Her: Masiyiyeke le'topic.

Me: If that's what you want.

Her: That's what I demand.

Me: Then we are leaving it but we have to talk about it sooner or later.

Her: Can you please scrub my back and avoid talking.

I chuckle and walk to her. She really doesn't want to talk about this.

Simthandile's pov.

I am editing my article I need to submit it before I knock off. The pressure is too much. Nkosi is back to being himself. The abuse, hoes, controlling. He even took my

phone I can't contact Yoyo or my mom but I hope they are perfectly fine. Am dying slowly but surely. Am not surviving am drowning I don't think I can do this thing with Nkosi it's too much. Am not at peace we started dating 6 years ago I was 23 then and I was in varsity now am 29 in an abusive relationship I can't believe this is happening to me. Cynthia is mad at me for forgiving Nkosi over and over again. I love him so much she doesn't understand but one day she will understand. I check the time it's almost knock off time. Mr Davidson is already leaving. Mr Davidson is my boss.

Mr Davidson: Miss Jaxa can you please walk me out. We need to talk.

I look at Cynthia she nods I stand up and pack my things.

I follow behind Mr Davidson. Am nervous he only talks to people when there's a problem

or you are about to get fired otherwise he is robot. I help him carry his things to his car.

Mr Davidson: Miss Jaxa your articles are a mess. You are mixing things. Is everything okay?

Me: Yes sir everything is okay.

Mr Davidson: It doesn't seem like that. Get your shit together or I'll have to let you go.

Me: I'll fix everything sir.

Mr Davidson: Miss Jaxa you are one of the best journalists but you are messing things up. People are out here fixing messes that you created.

Me: Sir I promise I will fix everything.

Mr Davidson: Take this as a warning. Please submit the article first thing tomorrow morning and then you need to talk to Mrs Anderson about her divorce and abusive marriage. Are we clear?

Me: Loud and clear sir.

Nkosi's car pulls up next to us. He is fuming with anger I already know the results.

Mr Davidson: Good I'll see you tomorrow then. Have a good day. Mr Mkhangeleni.

Nkosi: Mr Davidson.

He is low key pissed.

They hand shake. Mr Davidson gets in his car and drive away. Nkosi pulls me to his car he slaps me then opens the door and pushes me in. I fasten my seat belt and say a short prayer inside he jogs to his side. He drives away like a maniac he is pissed.

He parks at the commune he opens the door for me I walk out. He's greeting people as we are walking to my flat. I unlock the door he pushes me and I fall inside. He gets in and locks the door.

Him: So you decide to cheat on me with your boss.

Me: I didn't cheat Nkosinathi.

Him: Then why were you standing next to his car? Were you guys going to a hotel or you were going for a quickie in his car?

Me: No not at all. He called me asking about my performance...

Him: Ohh your performance in bed.

Uyandidelela Simthandile.

He says taking his belt out.

Me: No about my performance at work. He says I've been messing up a lot and if I keep on messing up he will have to let me go.

He didn't respond. He whipped me with his belt till he got satisfied then he undressed me.

Me: Please don't do i-

Him: Don't do what? Don't have sex with my fiancée?

Me: It's rape Brain!

Him: Don't fucken shout at me.

He says slapping me. He undresses himself and raped me.

I cried silently. He slapped me again.

Him: Moan for me!

I'd be stupid to do that. I kept quiet.

He slapped me again.

Him: Moan for Daddy!

He says taking the knife on the kitchen counter.

I faked a moan he smiled and let go of the knife. He pleased him. After a few minutes of crying he stands up and wears his pants.

Him: Go take a bath you stink.

I stand up and rush to my bedroom. I decide to take a bath. I scrubs myself till I bleed.

The door slightly opens. The devil himself appears he is smoking.

Him: Hurry up we have guests. Your outfit is already on the bed.

He walks out. He is smirking.

Insert 28.





Mbali's pov.



Mondays have to be the world's most annoying days. I kick the blankets off and get out of bed. I text my baby good morning. He'll answer when he is awake.

Well I've been thinking about what Ncumo said not the moving in thing am not moving in with him but he was telling the truth about my family. I hate admitting it but it's the pure truth I guess the truth really hurts. You know my family is full of selfish and inconsiderate people they'll let you suffer on your own but always run to you for help that's what they did to my mom only Simmy loved mom. As a kid I thought they had differences as time went by I noticed family is full of hypocrites no one really loves or

appreciate you they love what you do for them. I watched my mom suffer because of family and am also doing the same. My mom took herself to school cause she had a child while she was still a teen her parents were so disappointed in her but always ran to her for help. They never really cared about her but her money. Mom did everything in her power to impress her parents I feel like am doing the same thing mom did. I feel like history is repeating it's self. Am so desperate and hungry for dad's love Mom was desperate and hungry for her parent's love. I just pray history doesn't repeat it's self cause it's slowly repeating itself I'll do things right. I will make better decisions than my mom. Life is exhausting and beautiful at the same time. I just wish life was simple. If there was a way to choose family I would choose but I can't so I have to suck it up and live my life. I guess all that matters is people who love me

right. You know I need my family I mean they are everything to me we might have our differences but we are still family and family sticks together no matter what. Am also worried about Simmy I've been trying to call her but I can't reach her. She hasn't called me since she's left. I guess life moves on. Am sure she's happy wherever she is with her fiance. It's 4 months before they get married i can't wait at least I have something exciting to look forward to. I wonder how she's coping with wedding preparations I heard it's really hard and exhausting. Am still worried about her I mean she doesn't call or text I don't know if I should be worried about her or what maybe she's just busy with her fiance. She's way too busy too call let alone texting I guess she's too happy too care about me. I quickly brush of my thoughts. I wipe myself dry and lotion. I make my bed and head to

the kitchen. Hlehle is making breakfast. She smiles as she sees me approaching her I smile back.

Her: Good morning. She says pecking my cheeks.

Me: Hey boo. Are you fine?

She has teabags she looks tired. Her eyes are blood red.

Her: Yah just a little hangover and sex is exhausting but good.

She says passing me a plate it has eggs and bread she also made me coffee.

I look down a little. Sex hurts guys.

Me: Mhhh. I say swallowing.

Me: Having sex after a break up.

Her: Am a girl and I have sexual needs.

Me: You could've waited for a few months to pass.

I think am being judgemental right now but I don't like her life style it's just crap.

Her: You don't know salt wena.

Me: Sorry if I came out as judgemental.

I really felt the need to say sorry.

Her: No sweet. How are things between you and Bhut' Lurra.

Me: They are great. He's really good.

Her: That's good to know.

Me: Did breaking your virginity hurt?

I ask and look down at my plate. Curiosity got ahead I just want to know and maybe learn.

Her: It hurt a lot but I didn't bleed not all virgins bleed but it really hurts. As time goes by you start enjoying it. I'd say am a sex addict.

Me: Why?

Her: Slow sex can make you a sex addict.

Which got me hooked.

Slow sex? Isn't sex the same kanti?

Me: Is there fast sex?

Am sure she's no longer comfortable.

She laughs.

Her: It's not fast sex it's rough sex dummy.

She says hitting me playfully. Wow I guess I have a lot to learn.

Me: Isn't sex emotionally draining?

Her: It's fun and helps people relax and release stress. Well not for everyone but it can be used as therapy.

Me: I feel like you are feeding me nonsense. Sex and therapy on the same line are you mentally stable.

Her: Sex is therapy for most man.

I shrug and shoot another question.

Me: What do men enjoy the most during sex?

Her: Why are you so curious? Did you and Lurra have sex?

I breath in then out and shoot an answer.

Me: No I just want to know more you know.

I say looking at my empty plate.

Her: Well some men really love good heads and-

Me: Heads and sex? How the fuck does heads and sex mix?

She was about to reply. Am no longer curious sex is madness. Why heads couldn't it be thumbs or something.

Me: I don't even want to know what heads is. She burst out laughing.

We finish eating. I take my bag and head out. My phone rings from my pocket. I answer it without checking.

Me: Hello.

Her: Hey nana. Sorry I haven't been able to check up on you. I was swamped please forgive me.

Ohh that's Simmy.

Me: Oh hey. No problem. I was worried about you. Are you fine is everything okay?

Her: Am good doll. How are things your side. Has Noks been giving you trouble?

She says sobbing.

Me: Are you fine Simmy? I asked concerned.

Her: Am just happy to talk to you I really miss you babe.

Me: I miss you too. I can come visit this Friday.

Her: You can come visit babe. I will fetch you Friday after school then.

Me: Finally I get to see your place.

I say excitedly

Her: Look baby I have to go to work. I love you.

Me: I lo-

She drops the call before I could finish my statement. Strange the Sim I know will never drop a call on me but blabber after each and every goodbye people change I guess. I put my earphones on and play bye bye - Mariah Carey.

As a child there were times

I didn't get it, but you kept me in line

I didn't know why

You didn't show up sometimes

On Sunday mornings

And I missed you, but what we talked
through
All them grown folks things, separation
brings
You never let me know, you never let it show
Because you loved me enormously
And so much more then to say
If you were with me today
Face to face
I never knew I can hurt like this
And everyday life goes on like this
I wish I can talk to you for a while
I miss you but I try not to cry
As time goes bye
And I'm sure you reached a better place
And still I'd give
The world to see your face
Me right here, next to you
But it's like your gone too soon
Now the hardest thing to do is say
Bye, bye

I kept on repeating the song it's really amazing. Mariah Carey is one of my favorite artists her songs are touching and they feel so real she's the best.

I walk in to the school premises and my brothers are no where to be seen. Someone pulls out my earphones. I turn around and see Lonke he wipes my tears. I didn't even realize I was crying he smiles at me.

Him: Lil sis.

Me: Biggie.

Him: Why are you crying Biggie's princess?

I smirk.

Me: Listening to bye bye - Mariah Carey.

Him: Yhoo natso depression idibana ne anxiety. Did you know Mariah Carey causes depression?

We burst out laughing.

Me: She is real she talks the truth about life. She is amazing and gifted. Her voice is angelic it's such a blessing.

Him: Depression is real and Mariah Carey is the main reason.

Me: Try listening to her she's good trust me.

Him: Iyabanda ilemonade.

He says dancing. I laugh and hug him. We part ways am going to refresh my memory. I rush to class and settle down. I can't fail my test.

As am recapping this beauty queen approaches me she looks beautiful. She reaches me.

Her: Hey can I sit here?

Me: Hello, you can sit.

She sits down.

Her: Am Someleze Sithetho wena? She says extending her hand for a hand shake.

Me: Mbaliyothando Mandoyi.

Her: I am new here can we be friends?

Me: I don't see a problem.

Her: Don't you have friends?

Me: I do. My three brothers Owam, Lulonke and Chumani.

Her: Can't wait to meet them I hope they are handsome.

Me: They are a no go area baby girl. They are very hot.

Her: Hayibo Mbalz you can't choose for them.

Me: Am not choosing for them but for you. They have a lot of girls.

Her: Don't worry I have my own boyfriend.

Me: Thank goodness.

She laughs and pulls my book from me.

Her: What are we doing here?

Me: Am recapping for my test.

Simthandile's pov.

I pack my laptop and note book. Nkosi chose clothes for me as usual. I just hate that he controls me but I love him a lot. Love is really blind. Nkosi walks in and kisses me I shiver as chills of disgust run to my spine. I respond he pulls out he has this huge disgusting smile on his face. He passes me my phone.

Him: Call that bastard child of your sister. Am sure she's worried we don't want her to be suspicious.

I take the phone and dial her number. She answers we talk and Nkosi indicates time is over. I guess am a prisoner.

Him: So she is coming over this weekend?

Me: Ye...Yes. Not unless you have a problem.

Him: No not at all. She can come over anytime she wants to. She's welcome here after all it's your place.

Me: Uhm are you uhm sure? I ask nervous.

He sits on the bed and take his cigarettes he lights it.

Him: She can come as long as she is not a burden and she must leave on Sunday.

Me: She'll leave. Mbali is not a burden she's here to visit she can take her of herself.

Him: Don't tell her about anything that's happening here. Okay sweetie.

He says caressing my cheeks and puffing his cigarette on my face.

I cough he knows damn well I don't like smoke.

Me: I won't tell her. I promise.

He smirks. He grabs my butt roughly he spanks.

Him: Get ready for work. We are going to be late.

He puffs his cigarette in my neck. He kisses my neck hungrily. He pulls out and walk towards the door.

Him: Finish up. You'll find me in the car.

I nod. He walks out.

Am so disgusted he is acting like nothing happened. I can't believe him. He is fucking annoy. I take my shake and walk out. I reach the parking lot he opens the door for me.

Me: So you going to act like nothing happened.

Him: Nothing happened or something happened but am unaware of.

Me: You fucken raped me.

Him: Do you know the difference between rape and having sex with your partner.

Me: You forced yourself on me Nkosinathi!
He laughed.

Him: We are married. I paid the bride price this means I own you.

Me: You don't own me. Am no possession or anything like that.

Him: You are my possession. I fucken own you. You are my property.

Me: Am a human I have feelings. You know being raped is the hardest thing. You know

damn well I was raped in highschool but you are doing the same thing. You were meant to be my hero and inspiration!

Him: I didn't rape you Simthandile! It's not my fault you were raped in highschool you brought that upon yourself.

Me: How exactly? No one ever prayed to be raped. We don't ask for it.

Him: What were you wearing? A short dress?

Me: What a woman is wearing doesn't matter. 2 years get raped an infant gets raped and you are telling me about clothes. Men must learn masterbation also works and stop thinking like rapists. Women must feel safe wherever they go but we don't feel safe we always have to look over our shoulders because there are rapists like you. We get rapped by our fiance's and uncles. The two men I loved and trusted raped me. I was only 15 I couldn't defend myself.

Him: Shut the fuck up! I don't want to hear your voice!

Me: You know you are going to have daughter one day what would happen if she got raped? Would you tell her to come down and shut the fuck up cause you don't want to hear her useless sobs. Ohh wait you would tell that Daddy is also a rapist and doesn't thinking raping is wrong.

Him: Shut up bloody slut!

He says banging the starting wheel. I jump a little.

Me: Can you please drop me off at the taxi rank.

Him: With pleasure.

He drives me to the rank and leaves me there. I take a taxi to work. I leave a cup of coffee for Cynthia she hasn't arrived. I leave my article in Mr Davidson's office and walk out. I guess am early. I polish my article

about a businessman gunned down outside of his house nothing was taken they just gunned him down and left. Cynthia walks in and settles down I guess she's mad at me.

Her: Thanks for the coffee Miss Jaxa.

She says rolling her eyes.

Me: Are you fine bestie?

Her: Am good Miss Jaxa you?

Me: Are you going to ignore me forever?

Her: As long as you still with Brian, yes.

Me: You know what?

Her: What?

Me: I don't care about you Sisi. You can ignore me all you want I don't give a damn.

Her: We both know you don't mean that. You know where to find me after it ends in tears.

She says standing up. I side smile. She still makes me smile.

Mbali's pov.

Well Lurra did a good job in helping me I don't think I was going to Ace it. I think he must help me more. For the first time in my life I submit my assignment in time. He also gave me some tips on what to do while presenting and they really helped am sure I passed with flying colors. I really want the distinctions and the bursary. You know getting education is important to me. I hope I passed well it will work for me maybe I might get the bursary. It's after school now am working with Someleze and my 3 brother's. Someleze and Chumani were all over each other am so fucking disgusted right now. Busy licking each other. Am actually fucking tired of their behavior. We reached the gate as am hugging them I spot Lurra coming towards us.

Him: Gents and lady.

Someleze: Hey hottie. She says attempting to touch him.

I gave her a death stare and Lurra pulls me to him before her hand could reach him. He kisses me it feels so good it always does. I rest my hands on his neck. He touches my hair. I quickly pull out.

Me: Do not touch my hair!

They burst out laughing. Babe pecks my lips and forehead.

Him: U'right Bhabha?

Me: Am good babe wena?

Him: Am good sthandwa sam. How was your day?

Me: It was ama-

Someleze: Aren't you going to introduce us?

She says licking her lips seductively.

Owam: We will introduce you along the way.

He says pulling her away. Ncumo takes my bag.

Me: So I was thinking of applying for NSFAS.

Him: Then what are you waiting for?

Me: Am really nervous and scared besides I've never filled forms before.

Him: I can help you.

Me: That would be highly appreciated.

Him: Which varsities did you apply in?

Me: UJ, Wits, Vaal university, Unisa and University of Pretoria.

Him: So am dating a future lawyer and model. He says hugging me from behind.

Me: Am not sure I can do them both. Is it even legal to be a lawyer and model at the same?

Him: It's legal. You do realize at some point in your life you are going to have to quit modelling cause iyaphelwa and you can always have your lawyer job.

Me: I don't think am going to be able to focus on my law job while having photo shoots left, right and center.

Him: You can do modelling while studying then quit after getting a job at any law firm of your choice.

Me: What if a law firm of my choice is a law firm owned by me?

Him: Then we will make sure you get that law firm but you'll will need a few years of experience in someone's else's law firm and learn a thing or two from them then you can open your own law firm.

Me: Do you I really need experience?

Him: You do babe. If you take short cuts and just own a law firm a lot of things might get ruined.

Me: Mhh what if I work as a PA to a lawyer then separate my time nicely between my job and my school work.

Him: That's a really good idea. It will definitely work.

Me: So you and your business how are things going?

Him: You know Bhabha all I have is money and a solid business plan. Now I need a proper venue am thinking of buying a restaurant but I also want to start my business from scratch.

Me: Just start your own club bro I'm sure it's easier to start a club from scratch then you'll upgrade to a restaurant. Maybe move to a corporation company.

Him: You know that's not a bad idea. I mean it makes more sense than what I was jumping to.

Me: I was just saying you know.

Him: Well it makes more sense.

Me: You know what makes more sense?

Him: What?

I turn my head a little to make eye contact.

Me: Rather than buying a restaurant find a struggling restaurant owner get them to sell 60% of the business to you. If you own 60% you'll have more power than them and maybe

end up owning the restaurant all alone no business partner. Just a care free you.

Him: Are you sure you want to be a lawyer? You're thinking like a businesswoman who has 20 years of experience and multiple qualifications.

Me: I once dreamed of owning a hotel, lingerie line and my own modelling agency. Did I mention that am good with accounting, finances and business management.

Him: So why didn't you do those subjects.

Her: I did in Grade 10 but I quickly realized I loved law more I've always loved law.

Him: So you changed your mind and did what you loved more?

Me: Yep, I don't see myself pursuing a career that doesn't make me happy. I want to smile everytime I tell people about my job. Now with business it would seem like I was forced.

He nods.

Him: I love you bhabha. He says kissing my neck.

Me: I love you more.

Him: Aren't you going to be late for work?

Me: Shit! Let me rush.

Then it hits me I don't have my work top. I move myself from Ncumo's embrace.

Me: Luncumo my top. Ohh my.

I say biting my nails.

I always do that when am nervous. I know it's a bad habit but old habits don't die easily.

Old habits are strong like The rock, Roman Reigns, John Cena mabang bang and Undertaker.

Him: Yhoo hayi Mbaliyothando.

Me: Don't yhoo hayi me after you tore my top. You know am not a good liar Luncumo.

Omg what am I going to tell Mam' Lindi.

Him: Baby breath. You'll make an excuse like you left it at your aunt's house or something.

Me: Well that's a pathetic excuse. Come with something dramatic.

Him: You'll make a plan sthandwa sam. Am sure you'll think of something on your way to work.

Me: You're joking right?

Him: Jonga I'll think of something while you are also thinking of something that way we will be thinking of something. Couple goals sort of thing babe.

He says smirking.

I clap my hands. I guess I'll think of something cause uyandibhanxa uLurra. We walking home arguing about what am going to say to Mam' Lindi.

I bumped into Kuhle at the gate. I changed and took an apple. I took my things and made my way out. Walking to the Taxi rank is always boring when you are alone at least Ncumo is accompanied me. The taxi dropped

of. I walk in scared as hell so Vuyolwam hasn't arrived this means am early. I see her walking in.

Her: You're freakin' early. Kwenzeke ntoni? She says hugging me.

Me: Eish my boyfriend rushed me. He said something about professionalism.

Her: Where is Mam' Lindi?

Me: I just got here and I really need to see her.

Voice: You saying it as if it's a matter of death and life. Said a voice behind me.

I turned around slowly. Eish what do I say to mom Lindi.

Me: Uhhh it...it is. So Mam' Lindi I kinda lost my work top.

Mam' Lindi: What happened?

Me: I was uhhh... I was... You see wena Mam' Lindi the thing is I misplaced. My cousins from [swallows] EC were visiting and our

clothes were mixed so she parked my top in her suitcase. I'll see her in December.

Poff it's almost October. And schools are closing for 2 weeks then we are going back.

Life is a scam.

Mam' Lindi: December is way too far. I'll get you another top.

She says walking away. I sigh.

Her: You are a bad liar.

She says laughing. I join in.

Her: You should have seen your face.

She laughs harder.

Simthandile's pov.

My interview with Mrs Anderson or should I say ex Mrs Anderson went well. She just shared how abusive her husband was and her words changed my mind. Am getting Nkosi arrested. Well something he doesn't know I have enough evidence well not that much but

yeah. At least I have a video, torn clothes and broken electronics. I unlock the door and head to my bedroom. I pull a box that was underneath my bed. I grab my car keys and head out. I stop at Engine garage since am running low on petrol and I need food.

"Next!". A policeman shouts causing me to startle.

Lady: It's your turn sisi.

I stand up and walk towards the counter.

Policeman: Afternoon mam. How can I help you?

Me: Am here to report rape and domestic violence. Am also filling for a protection order just incase South African law doesn't take it's course.

Policeman: You know we need evidence we don't go around arresting people.

Me: You can go around killing innocent people but you can't kill rapist and abusers. You know what?

Policeman: What?

Me: Forget killing them you can't even arrest them. You can't do a simple thing. You are useless. I don't understand why you guys are getting paid cause you do your jobs.

Policeman: Can we proceed mam. There are more people I need to work with.

Me: So the abuser and rapist is my fiance.

Policeman: Then you guys need to fix your things in your bedroom. Your marriage hasn't even started but you are already ruining it.

Me: Are you some sort of marriage adviser that I don't know about?

Policeman: Am telling you the truth.

Everytime something goes wrong in marriage women always run to the cops first. Then you wonder why your marriages don't last.

Me: Oh my gosh stop trying to be a marriage adviser.

Policeman: The truth hurts now doesn't it?

Me: ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME!?

A lot of people turned to look at me. I kept screaming.

Policeman: Someone call the security.

The security walked in. The security dragged me out as am screaming to the top of my lungs. A guy in suits came to us.

Man: You can't drag a woman like that. Mam is everything okay?

Security: Everything is okay sir.

Me: There's nothing okay here. South African's justice system is fucked up!

Man: What's wrong mam?

Me: Am kicked out of the police station for reporting rape and domestic violence.

Man: Let go of the lady. Mam come on I'll make sure they assist you.

They let go of me. I fix my top and walk away. As soon as we walk the marriage adviser policeman makes his way to us.

Policeman: I thought I told you to go and fix your marriage in your bedroom.

Man: Do what you are paid for or else you'll lose your job.

Policeman/marriage adviser: Sir we can't help you.

Man: DON'T FUCKEN MESS WITH ME!

His voice is so deep and fucken sexy. He is a whole fucken snack. Focus Sim!!

Policeman: Sir-

Man2: Bafo.

They bro hug. He shakes hands with me.

Man2: What's happening. Wavuka ulaka.

Man: Your cops don't know their job. They dragging this beautiful lady out. She's here to report domestic violence and rape.

He called me beautiful. Fuck you Simmy.

Man2: I'll assist her myself.

Man: Ngiyabonga bafo. Usalekahle ntokazi.

Me: Bendicela uhlale.

He smiles and takes my hand into his.

Nkosi: How can you do this to me

Simthandile!? You are going to pay for this.

You clearly don't know who am.

He says as the cops drag him out.

Me: Thank you.

I say to the guy who helped me.

Him: The pleasure is all mine Simthandile.

Me: Thanks once again. I'll forever be grateful.

Him: No problem honey.

He says hugging me.

I get in my car and drive away.

Insert 29.



Simthandile's pov.



I woke up feeling happy today knowing that Nkosi is not here and am finally free. Am thinking of looking for a new apartment and forget about everything bad thing that happened here. Maybe move on with my life and obviously stay the fuck away from man. I regret even agreeing to marry Nkosi but am a free girl I can spread my wings and fly up high. I can finally leave my life after 2 full years of abuse. You know our relationship was perfect for the first 4 years everything changed after 4 years. I was baby sitting her she couldn't even tell me she is allergic to nuts or pork she'd just eat it up like it was nothing. Even when she wanted the bathroom she'd just stare at me till I ask her what's wrong. I hope she eases up and lives her life before considering marriage or anything like

that. I pray she studies her partner and see what type of a man is he before taking huge decisions that she'll will regret. Am driving to McDonald's to get me and Cynthia. I will also share the good news with her am sure she's going to be extra happy. She's been trying to convince me to leave Nkosi but I was blind. I guess love is really blind and thanks to soon to be ex Mrs Anderson her story changed my mind. I would have stayed in that toxic relationship. I pass through the drive thru and get food.

I see Cynthia walking in. I call her as I jog behind her.

Me: Cynthia!! I shout out.

She stops on her tracks. I also stop.

Her: I said talk to me after you have broken up with Nkosi.

Me: I did. I even got him arrested.

She turns around to face me.

Her: What did you just say?

Me: I broke up with Nkosi and called the cops on him.

Her: When is his trial?

Me: Am not sure I think next week.

Her: Don't dare drop the charges ke sisi.

Me: Why would i do that?

Her: Nkosi has always whispered sweet somethings to you and everytime he whispered you would do exactly what he wants. Please don't do it. I know abusers are smooth talkers please don't fall for his trash Simthandile.

Me: I promise I won't do such a stupid thing.

Her: I hope and pray he rots in jail.

Me: Am sure he'll rot in jail the evidence I have is solid.

Her: Am so proud of you and I would love to thank whoever convinced you to leave Nkosi. She/he just saved an amazing soul.

She says with teary eyes.

Me: I don't know if I didn't have the interview with Mrs Anderson what would have happened.

Her: I love you Simmy and you don't understand that.

A tear escapes she quickly wiped it away.

Me: I love you too.

I say hugging her.

Her: I can't believe we didn't talk to each other for such a long time.

She chuckles in between her sobs.

Me: What a cry baby you are.

Her: Ohh please. She says letting go of me.

Me: So I was thinking of getting a new apartment before Friday.

Her: Friday is too soon.

Me: I know but Mbaliyothando is coming and I don't want her to be in a place that carries such memories. I also want to start over and forget everything.

Mbali's pov.

Her: Please Mbaliyothando. She says making puppy eyes.

Me: No Someleze.

Her: Pretty please. Am begging you.

Me: A no is a no. Whether it's pink or black it's still a no.

Her: Mbali it's a once off thing. I promise it won't happen ever again.

Me: Am not coming Soso.

Her: Mbali there's this guy I like he invited me to this party I've been trying to impress him.

Me: Shame uzothini kengoku?

Her: I've always had this huge crush on him.

Me: Yoh ithanda ubanzima leyakho.

Her: He finally sees me Mbali after a long time of trying to get his attention. Please don't ruin this for me.

Me: I didn't have to impress my boyfriend so I don't really understand what you went through to impress the poor guy.

Her: Mbali kea u kopa.

- Mbali am begging you.

Me: Kopa in any language I don't care. Am not going to a party on a school day!

Her: Ka kopa hle.

- Pretty please.

Me: Soso I said no. I can't go to a party on a school night. My dad won't allow me.

Her: A ka se tsebe.

- he won't know.

Me: Try talking in Zulu or Xhosa broo.

Her: Sorry am used to speaking mom's home language than dad's home language.

Me: Well I don't understand your mom's home language.

Her: Hawu?

Me: Maybe I understand Sesotho but quit talking to me in Sotho.

Her: Okay I'll stop but can you please come with me. I really need a date.

Me: You need a date? Are you that desperate?

Her: Yes. Am way too desperate for my liking.

Me: I'll talk to my half sister am sure she won't have a problem. Y'all have free booze right?

Her: Well I wanted to go with my newly found friend but it's fine if she doesn't want to come.

She makes a sad face.

Me: Hey I can attend a lot of parties on weekends. Make sure you have a party for next week Saturday.

Her: Next week Saturday? Why can't we have one this weekend?

Me: Am visiting my Aunt and am free next week Saturday.

Her: Let me cancel once and for all am sure there are more guys who want me even though am not interested in them.

She says taking her phone from her pocket.

Me: You don't have to cancel babe.

I snatch it from her.

Her: You are coming?

Her face lights up. I smile a little bit.

Me: Am not coming but my half sister is coming. Am sure she won't have a problem.

Her: Fine I'll go with her. I hope she is not a snob.

Me: So where is this party?

Her: Why don't you come see for yourself.

Me: Still not coming.

Her: Well you won't know.

Me: Please tell me just in case something goes wrong and I'll know where you went or you were last seen please.

Her: I will be fine.

Me: Anything can happen these days. I mean do you trust the guy? Do you know him.

Her: I don't but-

Me: My point exactly. What if he sells you to some foreign guys or he rape then ditch you in the middle of nowhere? Huh?

Her: Okay I'll send you my location if that will make you better.

Me: That's better.

Hlehle is Someleze's date. At least she won't be alone. Hlehle is fixing her make up.

Me: You know you don't have to go if you don't want to.

Her: I want to Mbaliyothando.

Me: For the last time are you sure you want to go?

Her: I Yakhokuhle Mandoyi is 100% sure that I want to go. I want to meet my sister's half friend.

Me: She can be annoying at times so be easy at her.

Her: I know how to deal with annoying roaches.

Me: Please don't leave her behind Hlehle.

Her: Ndingawinwa mna ngenxaka Makhulu uNomahobe? Ngubani igamalakhe?

Me: NguSoso.

Her: I hope umxelele ba andiyo babysitter.

Me: Yeka mfee sukuya once.

Her: Ndiyaya Mbali but andizugada uGog' Nodoli.

My phone rang. It was Soso she said she's outside.

Me: Gog' Nomahomba is outside.

She laughs. She takes her bag and heads outside. I put my gown on and follow her.

Omg I didn't think Soso's dad was this rich.

She did say she was coming with her dad's car but she didn't mention she was coming with a Land Rover. It seems like her and

Hlehle were arguing. They quickly shut up as they see me closing the gate. I make my way to them.

Me: Guys are you fine?

Them: What? No, no.

Me: Mmk. Well Hlehle this is Soso, Soso this is Hlehle my sister.

They both roll their eyes and flip their long eyelashes.

Hlehle: Can we please go.

Me: Don't kill each other please.

They are giving each other nasty looks. One would swear they are about to eat each other alive.

Soso: I can't promise you that.

Me: Someleze!

Soso: I'll bring her alive I can't say the same about unharmed.

Kuhle's pov.

She parked the car outside a club in Sandton. Well I've been to all the clubs in Sandton so am not really shocked. I mean my boyfriends were rich so they took me to most expensive restaurants, clubs, bars, hotels and boutiques so this is nothing new to me.

Her: Get the fuck out of my car.

Me: Try putting a little smile on that pathetic face of yours and stay the fuck away from me. You don't know me I don't know you.

Her: After so many years of knowing each other Yakhokuhle Mandoyi we finally agree on something.

Me: I really need the bathroom. Mind showing me.

Her: Follow me.

Let's see what will happen to that little pathetic ego she has. I hate her with every little thing in me. A part of me really wants

to reap her apart. We get to the bathroom I pin her against the wall.

Her: You still pull the same stunts I expected better from you.

Me: Which stunts are you talking about honey?

I have my arm against her neck.

Her: You know damn well what am talking about.

Me: Mamele I don't know what you talking about but stay the fuck away from Mbaliyothando.

Her: What if I don't? What are you going to do kill me.

Me: Just stay the actual fuck away from my sister.

She laughs trying to catch her breath.

Me: You know I can destroy you. I can have to you behind bars in a blink of an eye. You know you will serve life for human

trafficking, kidnapping, drug smuggling, murder and a lot of things.

Her: Where did you hear that.

Me: Remember I was part of the gang. I was recruited at the age of 11 left the gang at 17 I know the in's and out's.

Her: You think you scar me wena. Sgora samnga.

I chuckle and drag her to the toilet. I push her head in and flush she kicks I pull her head out.

Me: You stay away from my sister.

Her: You no longer scare me Mandoyi you are nothing but a spineless bastard.

Me: You are fucked.

Voice: Is everything okay?

Me: We are fine Mam. Wipe your face make sure you don't smell like shit.

>>> 4 weeks later <<<

Mbali's pov.

Schools are closed for a week. So am staying with Simmy she asked me to keep her company since she isn't used to living alone.

Her fiance is away on some business trip or what so ever I didn't really get her story. It doesn't make sense. The beds at her

apartment are really comfortable and big.

Well the food is really good she is a good cook. The view here is really good I love it.

Staying with Simmy is really fun I enjoy staying with my Simthandile. Well she is

taking me out once again. She is always taking me out to see different things. So she took

me to Carnival Mall/City, Mall of Africa & Gold Reef City just a few days ago. Am

definitely going to turn into a spoilt brat.

Sim: Mbaliyothando hurry up! She shouts from the kitchen.

Me: Am coming! I shout back.

I put on a black jean and knit sweat I let my braids loose.

Her: Mbali khawuleza!

Me: Ndiyeza Simthandile!

I quickly put on my shoes and head to the kitchen. She's eating oats. She didn't make me cause I hate it.

Me: Morning Simmy.

Her: Morning apple cheeks. She says laughing.

Apple cheeks is my childhood nickname. I had huge cheeks and Simmy loved grabbing them. Sometimes she'd pretend like she wants to bite them I'd always cry and run to dad.

Her: Mbali are you fine? You look uneasy.

Me: I though I was about to vom-

I rush to the bathroom. I throw up.

Her: Nana are you sure you are fine?

She says brushing my back.

Me: Yeah am fine. I think it's a [cough] bug or something. I've never ate so much chunk food.

I get up and wipe my mouth

Sim: Well let's cancel our trip. Maybe get a rest from oily and sugary food.

Me: No, I really want dunked wings from KFC, coke, Cheesecake, fish and chips.

Her: Slowdown you've been eating a lot lately.

Me: I also want waffles and-

Her: Woah woah waffles since when do you love waffles. Mbali waffles, amagwinya, chicken feet, peanut butter, biltong, mayonnaise, pickles, avocado, plain yogurt and cheese you hated everything that I just counted actually you despised it.

Am also craving sex Simthandile but you don't hear me making noise about that. I said in my mind.

Me: People change Simthandile.

Her: Mbali you've been eating a lot of strange things lately. Strawberries dipped in peanut butter?

Me: Are you really complaining about food?

Her: Am not complaining am worried.

Me: Stop worrying about me am fine!

Her: Don't shout at me kaloku.

Insert 30.



Luncumo's POV.



"I miss you babe." Her eyes are watery.

Honestly I miss Bhabha too. Having her far from me breaks my heart. Talking to her on the phone is not enough. The video calls are not enough. I really want to hold her. I yearn and burn for her touch. Ever craved for

something so bad that you would give anything and everything to get what you crave for, that's how much I crave Bhabha's touch. Her touch was made for me to peruse and use to set my soul alight and still.

Me: I miss you more Bhabha. When are you coming back?

Her: Am not sure but I might be coming back on Tuesday.

I frown.

She won't spend enough time with me.

Schools are opening on Wednesday.

Me: Can you please come back two days before.

Today it's Friday right which means she can spend Friday, Saturday and Sunday with her aunt then spend Monday and Tuesday with me. Still won't be enough at least I will get to see her touch. Spend more times with her. I just hope her Someleze friend won't ruin our plans once again. I don't like the girl she

looks like a bad & fake friend I don't even know how Bhabha became friends with such a wild and really strange girl. I know I can't be choosing friends for Bhabha but there's something strange about that little girl. I don't know what it is but it's really hard to ignore.

Her: I am not promising anything babe. I might come back. I might not come back.

"Might" she says. I will make sure she comes back on Monday. I miss everything about her. How she runs her mouth about school, varsity, modelling, her brothers, her mom and my personal favorite business. How I forcefully have to feed her. She doesn't like food well she prefers light food. I don't think light food makes you full. I'd rather eat a plate full of braaid meat, pap and chakalaka. I miss how her eyes lighten up when she talks about her favorite things. How she bites her lower lip and squint her

eyes you'd swear she's trying to seduce but that's something she does when she's nervous, thinking, angry or scared. She also does it when she's trying to push her tears back.

Me: Am sure your aunt won't mind if you come back early.

Call me crazy for chasing after a 17 year old while am 21 I mean love is love right no matter how old you are. She's more mature than most girls my age. They are still in the 'hoe life' thing. Even girls her age are still in the 'hoe life' thing. I find it really disgusting that there are girls who enjoy destroying their lives by this hoe life term. Is it a stage all girls go through or it's pure madness causes by peer pressure? In my opinion it's pure madness caused by peer pressure. I mean at some point in our lives we do things in order to impress our peers but this hoe life thing is crap just like the play boy thing.

Her: I will talk to her and hear what she says. How's your business doing?

Me: It's actually one of the reasons I need you here. I know nothing about furniture and designing.

Her: Am not really good with design also but I know someone whose super good.

Me: Whose that?

Her: My friend Kwanda Mgidi.

Me: I thought he is coma.

Her: Well I got a call this morning that he is out. I missed him so fucken much.

She says screaming excitedly.

She's hyped up by the world's smallest things. I love seeing her smiling and laughing.

I chuckle as she laughs and screams. Her eyes lightened up. She stops laughing and looks back at me.

Her: Do you know what you want? Do you have any idea of what you want?

I have no idea of what I want. I think Bhabha will decide for me. She looks at me waiting for an answer. I don't know guys.

Her: You don't know what you want? Are you serious about starting your own business?

Me: I don't know sthandwa sam. Can you help me perhaps.

Her: How about you try some Kasi theme.

The car tyres, the drum chairs or whatever they are called. Don't sell alcohol only. Have a car wash outside and sell braaid meat am not sure. Your favorite right? Am not sure if you like it or what but I think it's a really bad ide-

Me: I don't like it.

Her face quickly changes from unsure to disappointed. She's bitting her low lip. She's already thinking of something else.

You I thought of something like that but I also thought she would disapprove or something.

Her: Well I knew it was a really bad idea from the start.

Me: Babe am kidding I love it.

Her: You do. For a second I thought you didn't like it.

She says smiling.

Her: At least you have something you can give Kay. Also note he can be too extra.

All gays are extra so am not really surprised. Is there a calm gay cause those dudes aren't calm at all. We there hell do those people get the energy to scream day in day out.

Me: Yeah I know. I hope he is not annoying and I hope he is not flirty.

I've never met her friends face to face all I know is their names. I heard gays are too flirty and I've been asked out by a few.

Especially in my teens they still ask me out. I find it really weird how do guys ask each other out.

Her: No, hasn't. He is really friendly and knows better than flirting with his friend's boyfriend.

She suddenly looks a little bit worried. She throws her phone on the bed. I hear footsteps I guess she's running but why. I hear the door opening. I can't see whose opening.

"Mba-" the person stops before she could finish her sentence.

The voice is familiar.

"Mbali." The person calls out.

Her: Morning Simmy.

" You just vomited again?"

Her: Yeah but am fine.

" I think you should consult with a doctor. I can make you an appointment."

Her: No thanks, am perfectly fine.

" Baby are you sure? You are vomiting, you have mood swings, you are always tired, you have headaches and you eat weird foods."

Her: Not this again Simthandile. We already agreed it's a bug. My body is adjusting to the new food you've been introducing me to.

" I really hope it's a bug. Am going to work, bye baby."

The door opens and closes again.

Me: Isiphosenkosi you are sick and you decided not to let me know.

She's trying to utter words but non reach her lips. She bites her lips as they tremble.

She's nervous I can tell.

Me: Mbaliyothando!

She startles and responds.

Her: It's nothing serious Ncumo. She says biting her lips once again.

Mhh those lips. Damn can she stop biting her lips. Her lips always turn me on. She always looks sexy when biting her lip and squinting her eyes. I really want to run my thumb in those super soft lips. Hold her so close to me.

Me: Uhm..uhm... Mbali you are sick and you are saying it's nothing. Nothing Mbaliyothando Mandoyi!

She cries. I saw that one coming. She does not like being shouted at.

She sniffs.

Her: I was going to tell you Luncumo.

She says sobbing.

Me: Nini Mbaliyothando!?

She doesn't respond. She sobs even more.

Me: Bhabha am so sorry. Am just mad you didn't tell me you were sick. It might be serious. You need to see a doctor.

I look at her waiting for a response.

Her: Ndicela ulala torho.

Me: Ndiyakuthanda mnt'wam.

She doesn't say anything. She attempts to drop the video call.

Me: Don't, please. I want to listen to you sleep.

She keeps quiet and closes her eyes. I think she's asleep. She's so peaceful and innocent. Sometimes I feel like I don't deserve her. She's too fragile and way too innocent. Well am a sinner she's a saint. I don't think I deserve her.

Her: You know Luncumo I hate being shouted at-

Me: I know Bhabha and am sorry.

Her: Yima ndithethe. I was going to tell you am sick. You didn't have to shout at me futhi ndimdala Luncumo Soyamengaye Mphati.

Uyazazi awungomzali wam awundizali Luncumo.

She says sobbing with her eyes closed.

Second names. I hate my second name.

Me: Xolo mnt'wam. Xolo kaloku sthandwa sam.

Her: Hayibo Luncumo ndithetha nawe.

That's my gramms. We are eating breakfast.

Me: Hayi ndikuvile mama.

Her: Ucinga phi Ncumo? Uwarishwa yintoni sanalwam?

Me: Ayonto mama.

Her: Waziwa ndim sanalwam. Thetha no mamakho.

I smile faintly at her. I truly love her.

Me: Ngu bhabha mama.

Her: Ulenzentsoni isanalam ngoku?

Me: Uyagula mama and akafuni uyobona udoctor.

Her: Uphethwe yintoni?

Me: Andiyazi mama but iserious lento imphehweyo and unenkani lamntu akaxelelwa.

Akeva uMbaliyothando mama.

She burst out laughing.

Me: Awuzundinceda nyani mama?

Her: Uxolo sanalwam. Uthi uphethwe yintoni uMabhayi?

Me: Andiyazi kodwa unentloko, uyagabha and uhlala ediniwe.

Her: Umithisile Luncumo. She says serious.
I stare at her thinking she'll say she's joking
but nothing. She's serious, way too serious.
Her: Tchii ndizobangu khokho Luncumo.
I hope she's joking. Bhabha is too young to
have a baby. She might be right we had
unprotected sex twice and I cummed in her.
How stupid could I get. I wonder how will
Bhabha take this. She might panic and abort.
Well am willing to take full responsibility for
my baby if she really is pregnant. It's
exciting but am really worried about Bhabha.
I need to talk to Uzubenathi he is studying
to become a doctor he might know what's
wrong with Bhabha. Am sure she'll hate me
for making her pregnant while she's still in
highschool. I also need her to focus on her
school work. She might lose her focus at
school. She passed all 3 school terms I need
her to pass the 4th term also. I also don't
want her to be on birth control pills or

contraceptives whatever they are. I heard they cause damage to the womb they fill your womb with water. Some use them to gain weight. You also lose feelings. Just imagine Bhabha losing feelings for me because of pills. Yho ha.a don't imagine it cause I can't. I look back at mama.

Me: How sure are you?

Her: Luncumo ndinonyana abathathu namantombi amane. Ndiyayazi lento ndithetha ngayo. Umithi ubhabha wakho nizobona bhabha wenu.

Soze ubone nomnye wabantwana bakhe bebhongo apha kodwa sithule siyajonga. Baza xa befuna imali or bezoshiya abantwana babo soze ubone nomnye ezise imali or

Tupperware. Umama mdala kakhulu for uhoyana ne teenagers ne toddlers. Nam I have to take care of my own teenager.

Wanceda wathi mabasiwe komama notata

babo cause abazali baphambene oomama babo.

Me: Awuyo pregnancy test awuyazi lonto. Sude uvuye asikayazi ba umithi or uyazigulela.

Her: Umithi ubhabha Luncumo. Jonga ba awundikholwa Thomas yenzani ipregnacy test.

Me: Unenkani ubhabha. Soze avume uyotest'a.

Her: Uzomxelela senifikile e' clinic.

Me: Awukhohlakele mama.

Her: Luncumo ndinceda wena apha.

Andimithisanga mna.

Me: Soya ngolwesibini ke mama.

Mbali's pov.

This morning I got a call that Kwanda is awake. I think I got it a 3am from Kay's sister and I decided to call Ncumo. Well it ended badly cause I decided not to tell him am sick. It's not like he's a doctor. He won't

know what's wrong with me but it's kinda cute how he got mad cause I didn't tell him am sick. I make myself breakfast. Simmy already left for work and after work she's having drinks with her best friend. I guess I'll be alone this evening. Am going to visit Kay. I must say I had given up on him. I guess giving up is not an option and should never be an option. When you count your options never count giving up. Always remember giving up is not an option and it will never be an option. I requested an Uber and it's already downstairs. I head downstairs.

Me: Good morning sir.

Him: Morning young lady.

Me: How are you today Sir?

Him: Am good, thanks for asking, how are you?

Me: Am fine baba.

He is old enough to be my dad. How does he deal with all the snobs who climb Ubers.

I walk into Kay's ward he is sleeping peacefully. I look at him I really want to attack him with a hug. I look at him as he slowly opens his eyes. I guess he felt someone's presence. He smiles faintly.

Me: Uhm hey babe. I say in a whisper.

Him: Hey sweetheart. He whispers back.

Me: How are you feeling? I whisper once again.

Am shocked that he is awake. He is here talking to me. I reach for his hand while shaking. His skin is really pale.

Him: Am fine baby.

I caress his cheeks with my thumb. His skin is way too pale. He looks nothing like the Kwanda I know.

Me: Can I hug you?

Him: Why not.

He says smiling.

I pull him in for a hug. Am really nervous. I love him a lot. He smiles like medicine. I make sure to rub my perfume on him.

Me: You smell better. I say inhaling my perfume from him.

He laughs a little.

Him: You still hate the smell of hospitals.

I despise the smell rha.

If I was raped I was not going to smile. If I was raped I don't think I'd ever heal. I don't think I would ever forget the night someone forced the self onto me. I would never forget how he pleased himself on top of me. I don't think I would forget the hurtful words he said while pleasuring himself. I know I would cry day in day out. I don't think I would be able to face people. I'd be too ashamed to show my face. I would be broken and shattered I don't think I'd ever recover.
Insert 31.





Mbali's pov.



Her: Do you really have to leave Mbali. This place will be so quiet.

Me: I have to, I have important things to do before schools opens.

Important things nguLurra.

Her: Am so going to miss you. She says hugging me tight.

I giggle and hug her back.

Me: You'll see me Simmy. You can come visit me.

Her: Never gonna happen. Ndidikwe finish nguNokuthula.

I frown.

I can't wait to leave that house. Just 3 months left then am leaving for university.

I'll live at school. I need to make sure I pass with flying colours.

Me: Suit yourself cause I won't be coming back anytime soon. I have exams coming and I really need to focus.

Her: Then when am I going to see you mmh?

Me: At your wedding. Am so excited. Am not even sure about what am going to wear. Am think-

She cuts me off.

Her: Are you done packing?

She says trying to dismiss the topic.

Me: Am almost done. Please pass me my jacket. She passes me the jacket.

Her: Are you hungry baby?

Me: No am fine. I'll get amagwinya ekasi sthandwa sam.

Her: Okay. So which varsity are you attending next year.

Me: Am not sure. Am ready! Can we go am really excited to see Hlehle and Ncumo.

She laughs and takes my bag.

I follow behind her and lock the door. She places them in the back seat.

Her: So how are things between you and your boyfriend?

Me: Good. Really good.

I don't like discussing my love life with my aunt. Am not comfortable enough.

I get out of the car first. Sim laughs and takes my bags from the back. Ohh I haven't told her Kwanda is awake I totally forgot.

Me: You know Kwanda is awake right.

Her: He's what?

She asks shocked.

Me: He is awake mommy.

I say excitedly.

I want to scream and thank my ancestors for waking him up. I'd love to thank my ancestors for waking my baby boo up.

Wait did I call her mommy. I laugh at what I just said. She joins in.

Her: Mmh mommy. I like, I like. Wow thank goodness. Am so happy for you. Am sure you are excited and can't wait to see him.

Me: I already saw him but it was for 10 minutes. I couldn't stay for long with him.

Stupid hospital rules!

Her: Anger sisi!

She says laughing.

We knock once and let ourselves in. Ohh shit Noks and Dad are having sex on the couch.

My favourite couch! My eyes pop out. I stop at my tracks. I close my eyes and cover my ears.

Me: I think.. I'll.... Uhmm....

I say pointing at the door.

Me: You'll find me outside. I'll get the rest of the bags. Maybe get myself amagwinya or something.

I say shocked at the view in front of me. You can tell sim is thinking of doing something crazy. I walk out and make my way to the car. I call Mam' Lindi to tell her am back. I'll go to work tomorrow. I play my talking Tom on my phone. I hear a loud scream.

I run out of the car to check what's going on. Yoh Sim and Noks are at it again.

Nosi and Hlehle appear from the passage. They are still in their PJ's. Emini kangaka.

Nosi: It's 11am for fuck sake!

They are arguing once again.

I ignore all the noise and walk to my room. I put my bags on my bed. My room is fucken dirty. Reeks of sex and weed. It's really dirty. Ayifani nam tuu le ikule room. There are condom wraps on the floor. I curse underneath my breath. I put my bags on the chair. I throw the blankets on the floor.

From white sheets to cream white sheets.

What a motherfucking wow. This is the worst

place one could ever live in. Everything is fucking dirty. The mats, blankets, sheets, pillowcase and curtains. It's like I've been gone for 9 years but no it was 4 weeks. Four fucking weeks. The door of my wardrobe is broken. Some of my clothes are on the floor. Some clothes are missing. Fuck them! I pick up all the clothes and put them on the washing basket. I change the blankets and sheets. Nothing expensive just some Sofia the first sheets and blankets I got from Lonke as a birthday present. I really want to cry. Am fucken drained. Am not sure if am going to be able to clean this room. Where the fuck am I going to sleep. Ohh wait I have a backroom. All it needs it's furniture but I won't ask Simmy. Bab' Mandoyi is the one whose suppose to be doing this but no all he knows is shagging that bloody aunt of mine. Abalothemba abantu balapha. Am not cleaning now. I reach for my phone and call Ncumo. I

asked him to buy me amagwinya kwa Mam' Mhlongo but he suggested Mam' Mshengu apparently she makes the best vetkuk. My boyfriend is never wrong so I went with his suggestion. I smile as a message pops up from him he's waiting for me ekoneni. I quickly change into his sweatpants, his baggy T - shirt and his favourite hoodie.

Vuyolwam's pov.

He's late today. He is late today. 30 minutes late. He is always on the clock. He is never late. It's not like we are dating or anything like that it's just that I have a huge crush on him. He's really hot and he's every girl's dream. Which girl doesn't have a crush on me. I see him walking in. I smile to myself. He's really handsome. He settles down & Nompi attends him. I roll my eyes. Nompi walks up to me.

Nompi: The guy says he wants to be served by his favourite waitress.

She says rolling her eyes.

Me: What?

Her: He said he wants me to call his favourite waitress.

Me: Am I fine? Do I look good? How do I smell?

Her: Hey, breathe. You are perfectly fine. Take a deep breath.

I take a deep breath and grab my note book.

Her: Chill you are gorgeous baby.

Me: Wish me luck.

Her: Make sure you don't fall.

She says laughing.

I walk up to him. He always eats his lunch here. Am used to him by now. Am definitely sure he'll order the same thing this guy eats rabbit food. He'd make a great rabbit.

Me: Good afternoon sir.

Him: Afternoon mam. How is my favourite waitress doing?

Me: Am good thanks for asking and you sir?

Him: Am fine. Can you please get me the usual and please make my coffee extra strong today.

Me: On it sir.

I say walking away. I reach Nompi.

Her: What is he eating today?

Me: Rabbit food and extra strong coffee.

She bursts out laughing.

His plate is always green. Well green food & tomatoes and a bunch of other healthy things I don't know. He is probably the healthiest guy I've ever met and the hottest one.

Nompi: Stop day dreaming about him. His order is here.

I take the tray from her and make my way to his table. Greens and coffee? I don't think they go together. I give him his food. He holds my hand as I attempt to walk away.

I swallow hard and blink countless times before asking him a question.

Me: Is there anything else I can help you with?

My voice is shaky. Am shaking. I need water. I need some air.

Him: Your phone numbers and a date would do.

His voice and touch are sending shivers down my spine. I feel some sort of electric shock. My knees are shaking.

Him: So are you willing to help me with your numbers beautiful lady.

He says passing me his phone. It's an iPhone am not sure iPhone what but I know it's an iPhone from that bitten apple sign at the back. I hesitate on taking it but he puts in my hands.

Him: Please pretty lady. He says with a pleading look on his voice.

I smile at him and write my numbers. I give him his phone.

Me: There you go. I say attempting to walk away again.

He tightens his grip but makes sure he doesn't hurt little Vuyolwam.

Him: Let me check if it's the correct number or uyang' shayashaya.

He calls me. My phone rings.

Him: Thank you mi amor.

I smile at him even though I didn't understand what he just said. He kisses my hand.

Him: Peudes ir hermosa.

I look at him confused. How many languages does this guy speak.

Him: You can go beautiful.

I open the gate and Ayabonga comes running to me. He takes my bag from me.

Him: When are we going home am sick and tired of this shack.

We ended up renting a shack and divided it into 2. A kitchen and a bedroom.

Me: I don't know nana. How is mama?

Him: She's doing a lot better than yesterday. I think she's getting better hopefully soon enough she'll be able to go to work.

Me: I hope so too. We can't live off grant money and my little salary.

Him: I know sis but hang in there. Are you ready for the last term of school?

He says opening the door for me.

Me: Am not ready. You know it's hard for poor people like us. We always get mocked and bullied. I can't say am looking forward to that.

Him: At least we will eat free food and maybe cut down on some unnecessary things. That way we will save enough and get out of this shack right?

Me: Yes. I can't wait to get out of this place and never come back. Let me check up on mama.

He nods and rushes outside. I walk inside the room she's sleeping peacefully. I decided not to disturb her.

Ayabonga, Sinethemba and Sinalo just finished doing their homeworks. I dish for my family and serve them their food. It's nothing much but pap and cabbage.

Sine: Vuyo schools are opening soon and I need new socks and my panties are worn out. I also need new pencils and rulers. My school bag, jersey and shoes are also torn.

Me: It's the last term of the year. You don't need all these things I'll replace them next year. Khona khange ndizithenge ipencil ne ruler?

Sine: Zilahlekile Vuyo and bezingekho enough. Futhi es'kolweni kuyabiwa Vuyo.

Me: Uzobhala ngenyeke sisi. Andisebenzeli wena mna. Rhaa ibox le pen ne pencil seliphelile ngenyanga ezimbalwa. Kutheni niloya ngazo ezipen?

Sinalo: Mna Vuyo ndidinga phone and bonke abantwana base klasini banazo ndimndedwa ongenayo and ndidinga nemphala ezintsha.

Me: Andinamali bantwana ndini.

Sinalo: Uyasebenza Vuyo-
Sine cuts her off.

Sine: Futhi urhola nemali yegrant.

Me: Rha nithi nitya ntoni? Nithi nihlala free apha. Ndibhatala rent, ndithenga ukutya, ndithenga ipilisi zikamama, ndibhatala transport zenu ne loan shark ibhatalwa ndim. Kutheni nindinyela mhh?

Sine: Ininzi lemali Vuyo. Ingenza into ezininzi.

Me: Hayi hayi, hambo lala!!

Insert 32.





Mbali's pov.



Ever felt like you are being watched while sleeping. That's how I feel right now. I slightly open my eyes only to find my babe starrng at me. He's standing above the bed he has a cup of coffee in his hand. I smile at him. It takes a while before he realizes am up. "You are up mnt'wam" is the first thing he said. He was not just starrng at me but he was thinking. He was deep in his thoughts. Whatever he is thinking is deep. I can feel it. Well I know it. He's always like this when he wants to have a serious conversation.

Me: You want us to talk about something serious? That's why you are like this right?

Him: Bhabha ndiyakuthanda. He says kissing my hands.

Me: Nam ndiyakuthanda tolo wam.

He blushes. He is really cute. I feel butterflies on my tummy.

Him: Sondela ndincamise bhabha. He says in his commanding voice.

Luncumo always commands me. I find that really cute.

I lean in for a kiss. This time he does something different. That tongue kiss thing. I've never done this before. I've seen it on TV though. It's French kissing if am not mistaken. I follow his lead he's really good at this. He pulls out.

Him: Good morning sthandwa sam?

Me: Morning baby. How did you sleep?

Him: I should be asking you that. How did you sleep?

Me: Like a baby. Your bed is really comfortable. Just sleeping next to you felt good.

Him: Holding on to the muscles felt good. Spending the whole night next to your handsome boyfriend must have been amazing neh? I mean ubuhle obungaka emntwini omnye. Rhaa bhabha unelucky not everyone has a handsome boyfriend like myself.

I giggle.

Me: Ohh please don't flatter yourself uzibonile umbi kanjani.

Him: Mna? Mbi? Never lolo soze ndibembi nasephupheni. Ndiyihot chocolate mabhabha. I burst out laughing.

Him: Ndiyi cream sisi. Ndihot ndiyababa. You felt the heat last night ndlela le ubukhabangayo ingubo.

Me: Haybo babe kushushu ebsuku.

Him: Ewe, you were feeling the heat.

Ndivutha amalangabi. Am hotter than hot wings.

I laugh even more.

Him: Ndikutyisa isdudu ngefork sisi. Am pelepele hot nono.

Me: Ncamsil.

I say laughing. I choke on my saliva.

Him: Bhabha u'right?

Me: Mhhh. I say laughing and choking at the same time.

Him: Sela bhabha. He says making me drink his coffee. Coffee with no sugar! Hell naw! [in Nasty C's voice] I was about to take a sip.

Him: Wait! You can't drink coffee. At least not now.

I sigh. How the hell does he drink tasteless coffee.

Him: Wait I'll get you water. He says looking around.

Me: Am fine Ncumo don't worry about me.

Him: Bhabha I don't want anything to happen to you and my baby.....I mean to you..... you are my baby. What I mean is I don't..... am

sure you get what am trying to say sthandwa sam.

I giggle.

Me: Chill I get what you are trying to say babe.

I say planting a kiss on his lips.

Him: Are you hungry? Maybe I can get you hot wings and-

Me: My donuts from last night. Maybe KFC twister and steers burger. Will you get them from me.

Him: Is that all? Bhabha talk to me. Are you sure that's all you want?

Me: That's all I want sthandwa sam. Don't worry about me am not that hungry. Am not disabled futhi Ncumo. You've been treating me like am disabled since I got here.

Him: Bhabha I have to take care of you. You are pre.... I just need to take care of you mnt'wam. Ndiyakuthanda bhabha this is my way of showing you that I love you.

Me: Babe I know you love me and I love you too. You don't have to do all this to prove you love me. Lurra am not handicapped.

Him: You are not handicapped but you are preg.....

Me: Lurra what's going on are you fine?

Him: Am fine baby. Am worried about my business and am graduating soon.

Me: Luncumo wenza bani isbhanxa? We both know you are not worried about that. There's something else. What's going on mnt'wam? You know you can talk to me.

Him: There's nothing else. It's just that my mom is stressing me out. Ngapha I have this graduation thing and my business and you are.....

He's looking at my hands. He's playing with my hands and kisses them every now and then.

Me: Stressing you out? I say rising my left eyebrow.

Him: No, you are not. It's that I missed you and you will be too busy with school to have time for me. He's is not looking at me. He's avoiding eye contact.

Me: But I'll always have time for you Ncumo. I Can we please talk about your mom. Tell me about her.

Him: I'll get your things ntliziyo yam. Meanwhile you rest.

He says trying to avoid the topic. He stands up from the fluffy carpet he has. He walks towards the wardrobe.

Me: Luncumo.

Him: Sthandwa sam, ntliziyo yam, lovey wam, baby wam, my other half, bambo lwam, mnt'wam, themba lam, dali wam, mntuza wam, stovu sam samalahle, mama wabantwana bam. Uthini bhabha? He stops on his tracks. He walks back to me.

Me: You know one of those days we will have to talk about your mom. Am not going to

force you to talk to me. But you have to talk about what she did to you. I know she hurt you but you won't heal if you don't talk about what she did.

He went back to the wardrobe after he realised I was talking about his mom.

He sighed and rubbed the tip of his nose.

Him: I know bhabha but I don't want to talk about her. She's not my mom. She'll never be my mom. She's a passage I had to pass to get to Earth. I hate her Mbaliyothando!

He says looking through his wardrobe.

Me: We don't have to talk about her if you don't want to talk about her. You know Ncumo hate is a big word. You don't hate her you hate what she did to you.

Him: I hate her bhabha! I fucking hate her! She's nothing but a pathetic....

Am not up for an argument. I'll just let him be. I hate arguing it's not my thing.

Me: Okay. Ndikuvile Luncumo! Can you please get me my food.

He puts his jeans on and shoes.

Him: Bhabha am sorry. I didn't mean to shout at you it's just that I ha..... I hate what she did to me. It hurts being rejected by the one whose meant to love you. It really hurts both my parents hate me. Bhabha promise me something.

Me: Yeah?

Him: You'll be a better mom to ozayo.

Promise me sthandwa sam.

Me: Am not pregnant Ncumo. Get that out of your head. Am not yet ready to have kids. I have dreams and I want to see the world then I can have kids. So get that idea out of your head pretty boy.

Him: You are not sure about that sthandwa sam.

He walks up to me. He sits next to me on the bed. He unbuttons my pj top well its his pj

top but am the one wearing it that makes it mine. He takes out leaving me topless.

Him: Are your breast still sore?

I nod. Yesterday I told him my breasts were sore he did some sort of massage and ended up sucking on my tits tell me about a baby.

Him: Tell me when you are feeling cold. Okay sthandwa sam.

Me: And they are extra big. I hate them. I want my small cute tits not this.

Him: Give it a few months am sure they'll be fine next year. I think in June they'll be back to normal. Besides I love them like this. Scratch that I love them like this. He says kissing my breasts.

I blush.

He moves down to my tummy. He brushes my tummy and kisses it countless times. Talking baby language. I find this really cute it's such a pity am not pregnant otherwise he'd make a great dad.

I giggle. He's kind of tickling me. He plants one last kiss on my tummy and attempts to walk away.

Me: Mna Ncumo? I say making puppy eyes. He chuckles.

Him: Soze ndikulibale bhabha.

He comes up to my lips and kisses me.

Him: Ndiyanitha.....I mean ndiyakuthanda bhabha.

My phone is flat. I'll edit the insert. I don't want to lose it so am publishing it.

Insert 33.



Mbali's POV.





I swallow the cum and he helps me up from the floor. He takes his favorite shorts and wipes his cum from my tits. He wipes the basin/sink so we can brush our teeth. My inner thighs are on fire even my coochie. We just took a bath but he decided he wants more sex. Maybe I want more too. We brush our teeth making a short conversation. Laughing and smiling. After we are done he picks me up and takes me back to the bedroom.

Him: Can I please lotion you? Pretty please bhabha.

He looks at me with pleading eyes.

I giggle and nod.

He takes the lotion from me and lotions me.

He tells me to sit down so he can lotion my feet.

Him: Bhabha can I ask you something? He says hesitant.

Me: Yeah.

Him: If you were ever to fall pregnant what would you do babe?

I look at him with questioning eyes.

Him: Would you terminate or would you keep the baby? Our baby. My baby.

He says kissing my knees.

Him: Please answer me honestly.

Me: Honestly, I would abort the baby. Jonga, I still live with my dad and his wife. Those people hate me. I don't want to do anything that would make them hate me more. I still need a place to stay. Having a baby would make me lose a chance to have a dad.

Him: So you choose your dad over your baby?

Me: Ncumo, I love my dad it's just that he doesn't love me. I want him to love him and I'd do anything to get my dad back.

Him: Even if it means killing our baby, your baby.

Me: Yes Ncumo, even if it means killing our baby.

He sighs.

Him: Let me get you clothes.

He looks a little bit mad.

Him: Thank you for your honesty.

Me: Pleasure.

Him: Bhabha do you think I have a say in what you decide to do with my baby.

He says looking through his wardrobe.

Me: You don't. My body, my baby and I can do anything I want to do with my baby and body.

Him: As the father I have a say in what you decide to do with my baby!

Me: You don't Ncumo. You won't be the one walking around like a penguin for 9 months. Besides you won't be the one bad mouthed by

the community. I don't want to disappoint my family.

Him: So you want to kill an innocent baby!
Why, bhabha?

Me: It's not killing Ncumo! It's... it's....
it's..it's.

Him: Mmm? Hee? What is it bhabha? If it's not murder what is it!?

Me: Call it whatever you want to call it but-

Him: It's murder! That's what it is! Stop sugar-coating shit!

Me: Am not sugar-coating shit! Terminating is legal! I have each and every right to abort!

Him: Aborting my baby is illegal! You can abort any baby, not my baby!

He says throwing clothes at me. He slams the wardrobe door.

Me: Don't fucken throw clothes at me! You don't just get to tell me what to do!

Him: This is not about the fucken clothes!
It's about you trying to kill my fucken baby!

My baby Mbaliyothando! If you are carrying my baby, you'll do what's good for me, you and my baby!

Me: Well keeping a baby I don't want is not good for me!

He walks to me and helps me wear my shoes.

Him: So, you think killing an innocent soul is fine! Bhabha, I love you! I love my baby! I love both of you!

Me: I love you too! But what I don't want is a baby, Ncumo! Am still young babe!

Him: Am also young but you don't hear me screaming about that! Am also young to have a baby bhabha but I already love the baby!

Am so attached to our baby! Please don't kill my baby!

He says with watery eyes.

Him: Bhabha, if you don't want the baby you can give birth then give me my baby. I'll take care of him.

He smiles faintly.

Him: Him or her but please don't kill the baby. Babe am begging you.

He wipes his tears.

Him: Do you even have a real reason to kill my baby? Don't tell me about being young, not having money, your dad, disappointing your family, your rights, legal and illegal things. Give me a real reason.

He says calmly this time.

I swallow really hard.

Him: See, you don't have a real reason to kill my baby.

He brushes the tip of his nose.

Me: I don't want the baby and that's a really good reason to abort.

I take a deep breath.

Me: I don't want unnecessary burdens Mphati. I don't want unnecessary and unwanted things.

Him: Ohh now the baby is an unnecessary burden? Wow, I expected better from you. I guess expe-

Me: That's not what I meant to say.

Him: No Mbaliyothando, you meant exactly what you said. So my baby is a thing? I can't believe you!

He blinks his tears away.

Me: Maybe I did.

Him: You are your dad's daughter. You and him aren't so different after all.

I blink countless times.

Me: Yeah you are right. I am my dad's daughter. I am a Mandoyi after all. A Mandoyi is what I am.

I say trying so hard not to cry.

Me: Look I need to get home so I can do my washing and a bunch of other stuff.

Him: Bhabha-

Me: I really need to get home before dad notices I didn't sleep home. You know they'll be hell to pay.

Him: Put on your hoodie and your beanie.

I nod.

Him: But you know we need to resolve this issue.

Me: I know we need to talk about but not now.

Him: When then? If not now?

Me: I don't know Ncumo when I see you.

Him: When you see me?

Me: Yes, when you see me again. It might be tomorrow, it might be next week.

Him: When are you seeing me again?

Me: Like i said before I don't know. Am going to be busy this week.

He nods.

Am outside washing my clothes. Nosi peeps her head through the sliding door.

Her: Hey sis.

I look at her.

Her: Do you have time?

Me: Am busy Nosi. I say rolling my eyes.

Her: Do you have time to listen? I really need your advice.

Me: Talk.

She closes the sliding door behind her and locks it.

Her: I lied to my boyfriend. I told him am pregnant and he is now obsessed with me.

What we had was a no strings attached relationship but he found someone your age and I needed do something really quick.

Me: You made your bed so lay on it.

I say harshly.

Her: Please help me.

Me: What makes you think I have the help you need?

Her: Pregnancy looks good on you.

I mentally roll my eyes.

Her: You are glowing. Umhle Mbaliyothando.

Me: Mxxm.

Her: I was thinking you can give me some tips on pregnancy.

Me: Do I look like a pregnancy expert?

Her: No, you don't bu-

Me: Fuck off!

Her: I desperately need your help.

Me: Leave me the fuck alone! I wasn't there when you told your boyfriend you were pregnant!

Her: But-

Me: LEAVE!

Her: Okay, okay, am leaving.

Luncumo's POV.

Him: So, Godmother has been trying to reach you the whole day.

Me: I was busy bafo. Did she say what she wanted?

Him: Nah, all she said was if I see you I must tell you to see her. It's urgent.

Me: When does she want to see me?

Him: She said today.

Me: The latest?

Him: There's no latest for that woman.

Today is today.

Me: I'll see her tomorrow. After I convince bhabha she's pregnant. I say taking a sip on my beer.

Him: She still doesn't want to hear it?

Me: She doesn't want to hear a word.

Him: Tried a pregnancy test?

Me: I tried asking her to do the tests but she is sure she is not pregnant.

Him: Get her a home pregnancy test.

Me: You think I didn't try that? Bhabha has answers to everything. Like a 5 year old kid.

Him: What did she say?

Me: "Ncumo home pregnancy tests are always wrong. They could come back with two lines

even if it's meant to be one line. You can't trust those things." She's so fucken stubborn!

I say hitting the table.

Him: Just as stubborn as her boyfriend. I guess you met your match.

He says laughing.

Me: I guess I did.

Him: If you aren't careful you might lose the baby. She's a teen and teens can be reckless. Very reckless if you ask me. I look at my can.

Me: That's what I've been worried about. I don't want to lose my baby.

Him: Just pray she doesn't go anywhere with that new girl.

Me: That bloody new girl! Damn I hate that little girl. There's something off about her.

Him: Get rid off her then.

I give him a death stare.

Me: Qaphela I didn't kill him on purpose! It was a mistake! I didn't mean to! I was only

trying to help my mom! He was going to kill her! I was only trying to scare him!

I am talking really fast.

My hands are sweaty. Am shaking. How dare he brings this up.

Him: Hey, hey, I understand. I know you didn't mean to. It was a mistake. We all make mistakes Lurra.

He says trying to calm me.

Me: I was only 15 I really didn't mean to.

Please believe me.

Him: I believe you. Lurra I believe you.

Breath bafo. Breath in and out.

Me: I was only trying to scare him, okay. I didn't know he was going to die. I wanted him to stay away from my mom. He was going to rape her or even worse. I was trying to protect me and my mom from that evil old man.

Him: I understand Lurra.

Me: No you don't understand Qaphela. It was self defense. I was only doing it for my mom. My vision suddenly goes blur. I can hear Qaphela's voice from a distance. I can't see him. My head is spinning in circles.

My head is spinning. I open my eyes slowly. I look at this bedroom. I see Qaphela sitting across the room. I look at the paintings on the wall. The place is familiar. The only person who loves art and nature is Qaphela. My eyes are slightly opened. He is staring into blank space.

Me: Q. I say in a low tone.

Me: Q. Qaphela.

Him: Lurra. He says coming to the bed.

Him: You scared me ndoda. Don't ever do that bafo.

Me: What happened?

Him: You collapsed after we spoke about what happened when you were 15.

Me: Who brought me here?

Him: Me and my dad. You are one heavy motherfucker.

I chuckle a little.

Me: Do you have painkillers or something?

Him: I'll get you painkillers and something for back pain and neck pain. Don't move bafo.

Me: Am not going anywhere.

He comes back after 10 - 15 minutes. He passes me the pills and pours me water.

Him: Bafo you need to see a therapist. You need to see someone about this.

Me: Shrinks won't help bafo. Besides I don't have the money.

Him: Well I do bafo. I'll pay for it. Just choose which therapist you want to see and I'll settle the bill.

Q's dad is a well known business man. He has 5 successful businesses in Gauteng and 3 out of the province. I don't why Q would want to sell drugs cause his parents did everything

and anything from him. His parents have money. I just don't get why he wants more money. Q's family is the only family who has a double story house in my hood.

Me: Q you've been paying for my things since I was a kid you and your family have done enough for me and my gramms. The least I could do is afford my own therapist.

Him: You are my brother. Brothers help each other. Wena use the money you have to start your business.

Me: I'll pay for my own therapy sessions.

Him: Lurra let me help you.

Me: You've been helping me since we were kids. Am grateful for that. Don't worry I got this.

Him: Lurra-

Me: Nywe nywe it's not up for an argument.

Him: Are you sure bafo.

Me: Am good.

The door opens. I sit up straight. Q's mom appears. She walk in and closes the door behind her. She attacks me with a hug.

Her: Am so glad you are okay nyana. What happened?

Me and Q look at each other.

Me: It's nothing to worry about mamzo.

Her: Don't tell me it's nothing. When you keep collapsing. All this started when you were 15. The fainting and panick attacks and nightmares.

My eyes shift to Q's eyes.

Me: Am fine mamzo.

Her: Omg you are heating up! Q call your dad. Tell him to get here immediately.

Me: Mamzo am sure taima is in a serious meeting. We can't call him to come back because am hitting.

Her: Q stay here with him. I'll see if I can't find any meds that can help him. Remove the hoodie.

Him: It's freezing outside.

Her: He's heating up. This is not normal. It's cold outside but he's burning.

Me: Mommy am fine.

Her: I'll get you something for the heat. Q get my phone so I can call Dr Buthelezi.

Me: Q talk to her.

Him: He needs doctor Buthelezi. I'll book him an appointment old lady.

He says smirking.

Q can be a bitch. That's why Ovayo doesn't like her big brother.

Insert 34.



Mbali's POV.





It's 06:10am and am already dressed for school. I've already made breakfast. Am doing everything in my power in my to avoid seeing the Mandoyi family. I don't want to see any of them. Not my aunt, not my half sister, not my cousin, not my dad. They are exhausting. They might make my day worse than it is. Today I woke up on the wrong side of the bed honestly. I don't exactly know why am angry but am angry. I can feel it, I know it. I take my school bag and lock my bedroom door. Every step is cautious. Yep, am sneaking out, I don't want any of them to see me. Bandidike finish! Ndikruqikile ngabo! I close the kitchen door and lock it. I enjoy walking on quite roads they are more peaceful. Nothing is ever peaceful eMaphanga or Mandela. Maphanga, Mandela, Phola park and Greenfields are the only Xhosa dominated places in Gauteng and

places full of Xhosa's are never quite. At least I woke up early so I could enjoy the quiet side of Mandela not the noisy Mandela I know and having to walk to Mandela is just another huge ass problem. Honestly me and Ncumo are just lucky we don't live in the RDP side of Mandela cause wow. The government doesn't give a fuck about those people. The drains, toilets, water pipes, roads aren't in great conditions. The government doesn't even bother collecting the trash. That side of Mandela is just in bad conditions. Lucky are those who live where I live. At least here we have better service than the ones who live in the RDP side. The streets are just peaceful. It's only people who are going to work and kids who leave early for school. Everyone is walking so fast like they're late or something. Some have their earphones on chilled as fuck. It's like they are in their own world. How I wish to be in my world and just

not give a care about anything, be stress free, not care about what who says or does. After school am going to work and my shift ends at 20:00 on the dot. Am sure I'll be extremely tired after my long shift. Too tired to see the Mandoyis' and I'll sneak back to my bedroom. As long as I don't get to see the Mandoyis' am cool, really cool actually, cooler than cool. Especially Mr Mandoyi and his pathetic useless wife and their little spring chicken daughter, I don't mind seeing Hlehle. As am walking my phone rings from my pocket. It's my babe, Ncumo. My heart smiles, it jumps from excitement. He drops the call. Honestly speaking am not ready to face, not after what he said. He just had to rub it in. I already hate the fact that am a Mandoyi but he didn't have to rub it in. I already know my dad is evil. Am not evil, if I was ever to abort a baby, just know I had my own reasons. I mean aborting is

legal and everyone has each and every right to abort if they feel like they don't want babies or they fear the babies might run their future. He drops the call and calls a few seconds later. I switch my phone off. I'll talk to him later, not now. Am not ready to deal with him. As much as I love him, I hate him! How could he say that about him? I've always known somebody out there thinks am like my dad but I never thought it would be him. Well maybe I did think he would cheat on me, break my virginity and leave, make me pregnant and leave, leak my nudes, make fun of my scars like everyone else. I over think. I imagine things that might never happen. I think of how someone is going to hurt me. You know, I used to think of my mom's death. Am obsessed with people's deaths and my own death. Ever cried at 3am because you are thinking about someone's death and the person is alive. That's who I am. I mourn

people while they are still alive. I over think about each and everything. I can't help it. Am full of what ifs in my head. I really didn't mean to hurt Ncumo's feelings, I just don't want a baby, not now. Maybe when am a little bit older, maybe when am 25/6/7. Some where in those ages. Then I can give him all the babies he wants. Am not ready to be a mom. Am not financially nor mentally stable. I haven't dealt with the traumas I went through as a kid. I haven't forgiven myself about all the mistakes I made. I haven't dealt with my depression nor anxiety, something I was diagnosed with at 13. Who the hell enjoys staying in there dark and listen to music, Billie & Phora's music. Who the hell loves staying up at night cause nobody disturbs them at night. Am bottling up a lot of things. My dad's abuse affected me a lot mentally, but also pushed me to do better for myself so I could leave this place.

Maybe have a house in Sandton, Aspern/Asprin hills near mall of the South, Alberton, Brackpan...etc, etc. Maybe in one of those places. Maybe own an apartment in Newton or move to another country or province. I can't be a mom not now. I can't afford to pay my own rent. Yep, I pay rent at home. Each and every month. I can't buy myself clothes, food, school books, grocery and I don't think I'll be able to pay my tuition fees. I struggled getting money for my registration fees. Money to create my ID. Now he wants me to take care of a baby. I can barely do anything for myself. Now what the hell am I going to do for the baby he wants so, so bad? Am just lucky am not pregnant and I should be grateful for that. Pregnancy would ruin my entire life. My future! My plans! My chances of a better life! My chances of having a dad! Pregnancy would ruin every little thing for me! I sigh as I

make my way to school. Luvo calls me. Is top and wait for him.

Him: Morning Mrs Lurra.

I roll my eyes.

Him: Hayibo give me the scoop. Did you guys fight? Did you guys break up? Yho umjolo is not for everyone.

He says putting his arm around my shoulder.

Him: This is why a tap and pass. Not lamasimba ama' serious relationship. Phela lezifebe azibambeki. Once they see their friends dating guys with cars they want us to have money magically and own Lamborghinis and mansions. No wonder lezifebe zihlona fast bahamba bethola ama' disease kulabo mkhulu. Yerr izifebe ezincane! Rhaa ama-

Me: Hayi hayi fuck off Luvo!

Him: So what happened chommie?

Me: Hayibo nothing happened. Me and Tar Lurra are still fine.

Him: Did he cheat on you? Oh my gosh!

His jaw slightly drops.

Me: Luvo no one cheated.

Him: Chommie uze nalo homewrecker ndizo deal'isha nayo. Rhaa soze bohluhanise Mandela's favorite couple. iMandela yonke ikhala ngani.

Me: Yhoo Luvo khawuyeke obu bad bitch bakho.

Him: Ndijongela wena nje chomlet!

Me: Uyadika bruh!

I say smiling.

Honestly Luvo is my buddy. He is my bag bitchhhhhhhhh! No man I love my friends. My love for my friends is genuine and real.

Me: Let me check on Wam and them.

Him: You do that. You'll find me in class.

Hurry up chommie. I have news. The hottest mgosi of all times.

Me: I'll be there now, now.

He says getting in class.

I turn my phone on. I have 152 miss calls and 73 messages from Lurra. He's been trying to call me since last night. I click on Lonke's name. He sent me a message " Hey baby sis. Hope and pray you are good. We are not coming to school. Ibhahhalaza yenza amasimba!"

Me: Mxxxxxxm.

I didn't even finish reading the message. I guess it's me and Luvo. Am not sure if Som-Som is coming. That girl only comes to school when she feels like it. I get in class and sit next to Luvo.

Me: I guess it's me and you today buddy. I say brushing his hair. He has this really cute curls.

Him: Ungak'linge swine!

Simthandile's POV.

Me: Cynthia I'll be a little late. I need to start in Vaal.

Her: Is it important?

Am eating breakfast and Cynthia is driving to work.

Me: It's important friend. Jonga I ordered a puppy and am going to fetch it. It's not for me. It's for Mbaliyothando. I know how much she's obsessed with puppies. So am going to check them out.

Her: Okay. I'll cover up for you but puppies aren't important and they'll never be important. Puppies just bark and eat. Those creatures are useless.

Me: I second that but to Mbali they are very important. The kid treats puppies like human beings actually she treats them better than she treats humans.

Her: Are you sure she's a human mara. She's so different from everyone else.

Me: I doubt she's a human. That kid is a real weirdo and I love her just the way she is.

Her: I'll cover up for you Simmy but you have to pay. Drinks and dinner after work.

Me: It's a deal. So where would you like to go?

Her: Eastrand mall or Eastgate mall. As long as it has East and mall am good or do you want to take me to Mall of Africa.

Me: Then we are going to any East Mall boo!

Her: Want to take me to Menlyn mall in Pretoria.

Me: Decide ntombo!

She laughs.

Me: I think there's a knock on my door. Wait right here. Don't drop the call.

Her: I won't.

I open the door. My heart races. Are my eyes deceiving me. Am I seeing correctly. How the hell did he know where I live. Why is here. What does he want. God I hope he is

not standing in front of me. I pray this is a prank. I must be dreaming this is impossible. Simthandile you are dreaming. He is not in front of you. This is some sort of game. This is not happening. This is a dream, a really bad one.

Him: Aren't you gonna let me in?

Somebody pinch me please. I want to wake up and find out this is a dream. He is not at my door step. My legs are failing me.

Mbali's POV.

Luvo: Ufuna utya ntoni?

Me: Kota and a Coke will do. Maybe add a burger

Luvo: Mam' Rose 2 kota's, coke and Sprite, a burger and one pie.

Me: Add some lays. I'll pay you back.

Luvo: No need for that young one.

He say passing me my food.

We make our way to the tree where he sits with his crew. I greet them and sit down.

Next to Luvo of course.

Luvo: Mbali!

Me: Yintoni!?

Luvo: The poor girl's been calling you.

Me: Makathethe ulinde bani? Ulinde kubuye uyesu.

Girl: Uhm u..u..u

Me: Thetha!

Girl: Ubhuti Luncumo uyakubiza.

Me: Ibinzima lonto?

She nods no.

Me: Hamba ndikuvile mfondini!

Zolani: Do yourself a favor and leave before she eats you alive. Sis woke up on the wrong side of the bed.

I look at him and click my tongue. I get up and make my way to where Lurra normally stands when he's checking on me at school.

He has his best smile on. His eyes are

lighting up. He has this silly but cute smile on, he looks like a kid who got new toys or candy or Christmas clothes or an iPhone let me say their dream phone.

Him: Ntliziyo yam.

I smile faintly and nod.

Him: You don't look so good babe.

Me: Am fine Ncumo.

Him: Babe talk to me. Am not a fool I know you are not fine talk to your man.

Me: Mphati am fine. Am just a little bit tired.

Him: I have somethings that might cheer you up.

Me: What do you have?

I ask out curiosity.

Him: Wait here.

He makes his way to there security guards.

He gives them money. Honestly money makes me happy and it's exactly what I need. After a few seconds he calls my name. Wait he bribed the guards to let him in. He's already

in and smiling. I giggle as I make my way to him. He picks me up and spins me around. He kisses me all over my face. I giggle.

Me: Ncumo put me down please! Babe....
please!

I say giggling.

He puts me down and gets chairs for us from the two guys.

Him: Want a foot massage babe?

Me: I neeeeeeeed one! I say dramatically.

He chuckles.

Him: Babe am sorry.

Me: What are you sorry for?

He focuses really hard on my foot.

Me: Ncumo.

He lifts his head up.

Him: Bhabha.

Me: Apologize properly.

Him: Babe am really sorry about what I said.

Me: What did you say? What are you sorry for exactly? Be specific Ncumo.

He stares at me. It's like he's trying to read me.

I know Ncumo can't apologize. He either gets you a gift or doesn't apologize at all. An apology is not something you can get from Ncumo. Am still teaching him how to apologize.

Him: Bhabha am trying. Am not used to this. Am not used to saying sorry.

Me: Ncumo this is a relationship and in a relationship you beg and say sorry. Stop thinking that "icherry ayicengwa" phrase works. It doesn't work Ncumo. Icherry iyacengwa fethu. It ruins everything. You know sorry could have saved you from losing important people in your life but because you can't say sorry. You lost them. Sorry doesn't fix everything but it fixes somethings.

Saying sorry doesn't kill it's not poisonous. Saying sorry to people you love is very

important. Pride won't take you anywhere.
Swallow that crap and say sorry.

Him: I love you and am sorry. Anyways I got you something.

Me: What is it? I hope it's food.

Him: Nope not food but I can give you money to buy yourself what ever you want.

Me: What is it then?

Him: Remember you said you want to be a model and a brand ambassador?

Me: Yeah?

Him: Well, I happen to know a brand that wants to work with you and a modelling agency that needs models.

Me: What the hell!?

I say with excitement.

Him: Yep. Babe you need an insta account and followers. Well am already working on that.

Me: I don't have any experience modelling wise.

Him: They train their own models.

Me: But Ncumo I've gained a lot of weight.
Am really fat babe.

Him: You are fine.

Me: Am not am so fat. It's embarrassing.

Him: Babe you know there are plus size models and wena nje by gaining 2kg nyana you already think you are fat. You are not fat sisi!

Me: You don't think am fat?

Him: I don't see anything wrong with you.

Me: Ohhhhk.

Him: So am forgiven?

Me: So this is your way of saying sorry. This is your apology? Wow Mphati.

Him: You forgive me right babe? You forgive your Ncumo that you love so much.

Me: Ummm.... No!

Him: Ntliziyo yam what can I do to make you forgive me.

Me: Say sorry and buy me food.

Him: Yhoo hayike bhabha. Jonga take this money and buy yourself food.

He says giving me a R200 note.

Him: Wait let me add a tip.

He says giving me a R50.

Me: You are forgiven.

He smiles revealing his white and cute teeth.

Him: Ndiyakuthanda neh.

Me: Nam ndiyakuthanda njena.

Him: Nxapo maroro iza ndincamise ke.

He puts my leg on the floor and I lean in.

Him: Futhi bhabha.

I move closely again.

Him: One last time.

Me: Ha.a Ncumo.

Him: Please.

He says making puppy eyes. We kiss once again.

Him: I love you okay.

Me: I love you too.

Insert 35.



Simthandile's POV.



Me: Nkosinathi what are you doing here? How did you get out of jail?

I say breathing heavily. Am teary and scared. My head is spinning on the other hand my legs are failing me.

Him: Aren't you going to let your husband to be in?

Me: You are not my husband to be Nkosinathi!

I say balancing with the door.

I feel like am going to faint. I can feel I'll fall anytime.

Him: You thought I was going to stay in jail for a long time. Well I didn't sweetie and am here to claim what's mine.

Me: There's nothing if yours here

Nkosinathi!

I say with tears streaming down.

Him: I paid lobola for you Simthandile. You are my wife, I own you, you are mine.

Me: A...am..not.....

My vision gets blur.

I open my eyes slowly. I try moving but I can't. My body is sore, so sore. Am tied on to the bed my bed. How could he?

Me: Nkosinathi!

I shout two more time before he appears. He is eating pizza what a wow.

Him: Ohh you are awake Mrs Me.

Me: You are one sick bastard! You think life is a movie!

Him: I'll act like I didn't hear that, okay babe?

Me: Let me go Nkosinathi! Please, am begging you.

Him: You'll take your phone tell your mom the wedding is on we had some issues we sorted them out.

Me: I won't do that! Andiphambani.

- Am not crazy.

Him: Wenza lento ndithi yenza or uyafa.

- Do what am telling you to do or you die.

Me: Awuzundibulala awunaso isbindi. You are nothing but weak.

- You won't kill me, you are not brave.

Him: Ndizame Simthandile Jaxa.

- Try me.

Me: What going to happen? Uzondibulala?

- Are you going to kill me.

Him: I don't want to kill you I want to marry you but you are making things hard.

Me: I don't want to be your punching bag.

Him: You won't be my punching bag, you'll be my wife.

Me: Nkosi am not going to be your punching bag again, am that stupid, I was your punching bag but I won't be anymore.

Him: Stop making this hard let's get married.

Me: I don't want to get married to you even if you were the last man on Earth I would marrying a sick bastard like yourself.

Him: Babe stop making this hard let's get married and leave South Africa.

Me: You won't to kill me in these foreign countries?

Him: Baby I won't kill you.

Me: Don't call me baby! Am not your baby.

Him: Simthandile stop complicating things that are not complicate. This is easy we get married at the court and leave South Africa.

Me: It's not as easy as you think. You want me to leave my country, my home, my place of

birth, to be your punching bag in some foreign country, uphambene.

- You are crazy.

He slaps me. I scream.

Him: You have until Friday to decide. The clock is ticking, make the right decision.

He says walking out.

After a few minutes. He walks in followed by a very dark, scary and muscline guy.

Him: Watch I'll pay you real good cash. Make sure you don't go anywhere she might escape. Don't talk to her.

Me: Fuck you!

He walks out chuckling while chewing on a match stick.

Me: Sir please help me out. Am sure you can see what he's doing is wrong.

He ignores me.

Me: Sir please help me. This guy is mentally ill he might kill me, please sir am begging you.

He chuckles.

Me: I'll pay double what he pays you. You'll get the money immediately after you untie me.

He takes out a dirty cloth from his pocket and covers my mouth with it. Haybo this guy covered my mouth with a shoe boner.

Mbali's POV.

The time is 20:00 we are locking up. We make our way to the taxi rank, Vuyo takes a taxi to Spruit [Entlapho] her and her family are renting there.

Me: After stop sign. I say to the driver.

He drops me and a few other people.

I giggle as I see Ncumo waiting there for me.

It's almost 22:00. He smiles at me. I attack him with a hug.

Him: Bhabha. He says kissing my forehead.

Me: Baby.

I say with a huge smile on my face.

Me: Why are you here at this time?

Him: Am waiting for you babe. As your man I need to make sure you are safe.

Me: That's so sweet of you, but how long have you been waiting here?

Him: 10 minutes.

Me: Ncumo how long have you been waiting here?

Him: I left home 40 minutes ago if am not mistaken.

Me: Thank you so much.

I say kissing him. He spanks my ass. I giggle.

Him: You must be cold.

He says giving me his jersey.

Him: Let me zip it for you.

He finishes zipping it and plants a kiss on my forehead.

Me: Thank you.

Him: Ndiyakuthanda bhabha.

Me: Nam ndiyakuthanda Ncumo.

Him: So how was your day.

Me: My day went really good. It was amazing, you are amazing. How was your day?

I say turning to look at him.

Him: I was doing a lot of thinking today about what you said earlier on.

Me: I said a lot of things Ncumo.

Him: You know I took a 5 year course to study business and am suppose to be graduating and shit but am thinking of taking of spending another 4 years at school and learn more.

Me: What about your business?

Him: Didn't you say I must start my business and continue studying.

Me: Yes I said that but how are you going to manage with school and running a business?

Him: I don't know bhabha but am sure am going to make this work. I have to make sure it works I don't know how it's going to work but it will work, it has to.

Me: I trust you Ncumo, if you are saying you going to make this work, am sure you can make it help.

Him: It's either I make this work or I make this work. I don't have any other choice or option.

Me: You'll make it work Mphati.

I say looking up at him.

Him: Umhle mabhabha.

He says brushing my shoulder up and down using his hand.

His one hand is on my shoulder and the other is in his pocket and both my hands are wrapped around his waist.

Me: Enkosi baby.

Sometimes I wish I was done with high school Ncumo did Grade 12 when he was 16 then attended varsity at 17. Am sick and tired of waking up each and every morning to see the same annoying faces over and over again.

They are already sleeping cause the lights are off. I lock the door I don't even bother with turning the lights on. I tiptoe to my bedroom with my phone's torch on. I was about to lock the door but a voice behind me spoke. I drop the keys. It's my dad's voice I turn around slowly.

Noks: Turn on the lights.

Don't tell me am in the wrong bedroom, please.

I turn on the lights. Am in the right bedroom. Haybo these people decided to camp in my bedroom. They are sitting on my bed legs crossed with their little spring chicken daughter Nosipho. I mentally roll my eyes.

Me: Is this some sort of family meeting? I say hesitant.

Him: Mbaliyothando what's your problem? He says with so much anger.

You can tell if I give him the wrong he'll whip my ass. I hope I give him a good answer or it's over for me.

Me: My pro... problem tata?

I say brushing the back of my head.

Noks: What is it that you didn't hear cause he didn't stutter.

Me: I didn't quite understand his question. I say biting my nails.

Nosi: I don't see anything wrong with the question he asked cause it was loud and clear.

Him: Mbaliyothando Mandoyi what's your problem?

Me: I don't have any problem Mr Mandoyi.

Him: Mbali all you know is sleeping with that Mpathi boy and all the other boys in this community.

Me: He is not a boy ndoda. Uduru umgidi for uba abeyinkwenkwe, yindoda.

- He is not a boy, man. Homecoming is expensive for him to be a boy, he is a man.

My eyes pop out at what I just said to even think I said it with so much confidence. I hold on to the door handle just incase anything happens. He charges towards me. I open the door and run out. I hide behind the big flower pot. They disappear into the passage. I sneak to my room. I bump into Noks while struggling to open the door. Okay, am about to get a hiding.

Him: Mbali are you still a virgin? You know you have to attend umkhosi womhlanga.

My eyes pop out the question.

What the hell? Why the fuck do I have to attend umkhosi womhlanga, ndiyintoni pha?

Noks: She can't be a pregnant virgin babe.

I roll my eyes.

Him: Umithi Mbaliyothando?

- Are you pregnant?

Me: Am not pregnant tata.

I say with so much seriousness and confidence.

Nosi: Dad she is pregnant, she told me yesterday.

Him: How far is she?

Nosi: 5 months.

Me: You said you lied to your boyfriend about being pregnant, I don't remember saying am pregnant.

Him: So you are saying Nosipho is lying?

Noks: She's not lying she is pregnant.

I swallow really hard and shoot an answer.

Me: Mr Mandoyi am not pregnant, I don't remember saying am pregnant besides am still a virgin.

Him: Mbaliyothando stop lying.

He says slapping.

I hold my cheek and balance with the door.

Him: All you know is sleeping around with different boys yet you can't pay rent! You good for nothing bitch.

He has a whip in his hand. I scream before it even touches my skin. The first beating lands on my right thigh.

Him: Where did you sleep Monday?

Nosi: She was sleeping at her third boyfriend's place.

I click my tongue.

He gives me another beating followed by many other beatings, I scream to the top of my lungs. He beats until he is satisfied.

Him: Phakama!

- Get up/ stand up.

Insert 36.



Luncumo's POV.



"Ahhhhh Ncumo you are hurting me!"

Bhabha screams.

Me: Sorry, sorry. I say kissing her neck.

Me: I'll be gentle bhabha.

Am rubbing her scars from all the beatings she got from her dad she didn't even go to school because of that. I hope my baby is okay, if she or he is not okay the will be hell to pay.

She flinches in pain.

Me: Bhabha.

Her: Mmh? She says biting her lips.

She is trying so hard not to scream you can tell.

Me: Bhabha please move in with me, you can't live like this, this is not healthy bhabha.

Her: I know Ncumo but I can't leave my mom's house just like that. Cohabiting is wrong bro, am a kid Luncumo am still under my dad's guidance.

Me: Bhabha you'll be under my guidance.

Bhabha you are turning 18 in 3 if not 4

months time you are an elder, you can do whatever you want.

Her: Ncumo I'll stay these few months then I'll leave for varsity, the year is almost over, my days at that house are slim.

Me: Babe your dad is mentally unstable.

Her: He is mentally stable, stop disrespecting my dad, he is older than you for fuck sake.

Me: He is also abusive Mbaliyothando. He doesn't have a right to beat you up regardlessly of what you did, he could have just talked to you.

Her: He is my father Ncumo.

Me: I don't care about that he still has no right to beat you up like this, look at these scars bhabha

I say touching the ones on her breasts and stomach.

Me: Bhabha it hurts seeing you like this, these scars are horrible, look at your thighs.

Her: Ouch!

Me: Sorry.

I run my hands on her scars these scars are bad, so bad.

Me: Isipho please consider my offer.

She nods.

Me: Let me get you painkillers before you doze off.

She nods again.

I get her painkillers, I crush them and mix them with water. She can't swallow pills this is the only way you can get her to swallow the pills, she drinks them. Soon enough she's out, I carry her to my bed, I settle next to her.

My phone rings I reach for it.

Me: Gramms? I say yawning.

Her: Don't tell me you are sleeping at this time Lurra.

Me: Am not sleeping mama, what do you want?

Her: You called earlier, I was busy with the patients, what were you calling for?

Me: Can you please get me Dettol, bandages, rubbing stuff, painkillers and somethings that can help with the swallow scars.

Her: Don't tell me you've been involved in a fight again, did you and Bhabha break up?
I laugh.

Me: We didn't break up. I just need these things for someone important.

Her: Who is that important someone?

Me: Mama please get me the stuff.

Her: Luncumo you've been dating ubhabha for 6 to 7 months and ever since you started dating her you haven't been involved in any fights, you stopped taking your anger out on people.

Me: Mama me and bhabha are still together and I need those things for her, I was not involved in any fight, I haven't beaten up anyone for the past 5 months, thank you.

She laughs.

Am afraid am going to beat up Bhabha's dad. I haven't punched anyone in 5 months, I've been dealing with my anger but the old man has been testing me for a really long time, I have to do this for bhabha and am definitely going to take my anger out on him. Honestly am trying to keep it together and pretend like am not pissed but I can't.

Me: Are you going to get the stuff for me mama?

Her: I'll see Luncumo.

Me: Thank you.

Her: Don't forget to cook ke you can ask your bhabha to help you.

Me: She won't be able to help me but I'll cook.

Her: Mommy loves you.

I chuckle.

Me: Sure.

I drop the call before she says anything else. I call Q and Zuu. I tell them to come over I can't leave bhabha alone but I didn't tell them that bhabha is here, I connect FIFA and play while waiting for them.

"Luncumo ndoda!" There's a loud knock on the door followed by Zuu's voice.

Me: Ndiyeza! I shout.

I make my way to bhabha she is waking up. I play with her hair for a little while. There's another loud knock on the door, bhabha slightly opens her eyes.

Me: Lala, I'll get the door. I say in a whisper. I brush her hair for a few secs and she goes back to sleep. I open the door Q and Zuu attempt to get in.

Me: Kulelwa bra'ss ngapha.

- They are sleeping this side.

I say closing the door slowly.

They smirk.

We settle on the couch, Q makes himself juice.

Zuu: You look pissed ndoda what's wrong?

Q: He looks like he is going too eat someone alive. Don't tell me you want to beat someone up and you need help.

I sigh.

Q: Yhoo Lurra! He says sipping on his juice.

Me: I have to do this guys, am not doing it for myself.

Zuu: Who are you doing it for?

I look at Zuu then Q.

Me: Bhabha. That came out as a whisper.

Zuu: Who are you beating up this time?

Q: What do you want us to do?

Me: Her..her dad ndoda.

I say brushing the back of my neck.

Their eyes pop out.

Q: Uphambene Luncumo!?

Zuu is speechless, he tries talking but no words reach his mouth, Q slaps his mouth he comes back from his imaginary world.

Me: Bra'ss what I saw back there is really bad.

They look at me with questioning eyes. .

Me: The scars, they are really bad. I've never seen bhabha looking this bad, the scars on her belly, thighs, breasts, arms, back are bad. Even I myself I've never been beaten to that point, she can hardly move.

Zuu: You guys know you can have him arrested right?

Me and Q turn to look at him. Q is already red from anger, his eyes are already red, veins are popping out.

Q: She is pregnant for heaven sake!

I know my best friend is about to eat Bhabha's dad alive. I knew Q would be willing to help unlike Zuu, I should have called my

best friend only cause Zuu will delay the entire process with his cops and shit.

Me: Zuu don't you dare call the cops!

Zuu: I won't.

Q: Uzubenathi Solani!

Zuu: I promise, I won't.

Q: So how are we going to do this. You know madam can't find out about this.

Me: I think it's about time bhabha meets my gramms.

Them: Your gramms?

They ask shocked.

Me: Yep, gramms is a nurse and bhabha is going to be a patient, I'll leave her with gramms they'll cook and do whatever females do whenever they are together. Gramms will nurse those wounds on the other hand we will deal with her dad and we all know gramms won't let her go.

Zuu: Well I'll-

Q: You'll fix your relationship with her sister. The only person we need at that house is her dad.

Zuu nods.

Me: Let me call gramms.

I call her and she is going to be here, I don't tell her why she needs to be here, I just told her she needs to be here.

Mbali's POV.

I feel someone slightly shaking me. I open my eyes lazily, it's Ncumo. He smiles at me and sits on the bed next to me I sit up straight while rubbing my eyes.

Him: How did you sleep sthandwa sam?

Me: Good.

Him: Babe am going somewhere with Q but I'll be back in a few hours.

Me: Where are you going?

Him: Am going to help Q with something.

I nod.

Him: Wait for me in the main house bhabha.

Me: Okay.

Him: Don't make the bed I'll make it when I come back, gramms want to see the scars.

I nod.

Me: I'll go after washing my face and brushing my teeth.

We share a really deep but slow kiss he pulls out leaving me breathlessly.

Him: I love you bhabha. He whispers so close to my ear his breath hits my neck leaving the hair at the back of my neck standing.

Me: I love you too.

He buries his head in my neck.

Him: You smell so good baby. He says kissing my neck.

Me: Thank you babe.

He inhales my perfume from my breasts.

Him: I love you, I love this, I love us.

He says in a whisper.

Me: I love you too.

He nods.

Him: Let me go but I'll be back babe.

He says getting up from the bed.

Me: I'll see you in a few hours then.

We kiss one last time and he leaves.

I pull the blankets and cover myself. I slowly drift off to sleep.

Ncumo's granny had to fetch me from the room and I was about to bath so I could go home and she just had to fetch me. I scratch my head as I follow behind her.

Her: Ngena ungabaleka kaloku wena.

- Get in you might run away.

She says opening the door for me.

I laugh a little and get in. Damn! This house is so pretty, my eyes roam around I see pictures, baby pictures.

Her: That's your boyfriend.

I smile nervously.

This is weird, awkward and shit. I hate Ncumo for this how could he.

Her: Luncumo told me to check your scars and I don't see any scars.

Yep am wearing a hoodie, socks and baggy pants, my hair is a mess so I also have a beanie on.

Her: He also said I must wash your hair.

Me: My hair makhulu?

I ask shocked.

Her: Ewe your hair sisi. Let me get my first aid kit.

She disappears to wherever she disappeared to, I get up and walk around, the first thing my hands land on is Ncumo's pics when he was a baby.

Me: You are one cute baby. I say smiling.

He still has the same smile he had as baby and the lips, he lost the huge cute cheeks, I guess am not the only one who had huge cheeks growing up, I say in my mind.

I reach for my phone and take snaps of the pictures, she comes back after a few minutes and tells me to remove my hoodies and sweaters am wearing. Am not comfortable but I do what she tells me to do.

Her: Omg this doesn't not look good.

Who..who did this?

She says touching my wounds, I flinch in pain.

Her: Am sorry. Uhmm let me get water to clean this up.

She comes back with a metal bowl, a cloth and spirit. All am wearing is my bra and panties, she cleans my wounds with water and now it's time for the spirit. I scream as the spirit makes contact with my wounds.

Me: Ouch, ouch makhulu!

She chuckles a little and carries on with what she's doing. I can't help but scream.

Her: We are done. I'll give you painkillers and some stuff to rub on your scars, okay my baby.

I nod.

Her: Can I get you anything? Food, water, juice, fruits anything nje?

I smile a little.

Me: Am good makhulu.

She nods and makes her way to the kitchen I follow behind her like a lost puppy.

Her: When last did you see Richard?

Me: Richard?

Her: Am talking about your dad, Richard Mandoyi.

Me: I don't know the guy makhulu.

Her: Awumazi utatakho?

- You don't know your dad?

Me: My dad is Luzuko Mandoyi.

Her: Your dad is Richard Mandoyi and his brother is Luzuko Mandoyi.

Me: Makhulu you are mistaken my dad is Luzuko and he is the only kid at home.

Her: Bhabha your dad is Richard he was arrested when you were 2 years old. Your

dad's family forced your mom to marry
Luzuko.

I look at her confused.

Her: Lu-

Me: So makhulu how was Ncumo when he was
growing up.

I say trying to dismiss the topic.

Her: He was naughty he still is.

Him: You see gramms does your hair better
than I do it.

He says taking off his shoes. He just got
back from what he was doing with his friend.

Me: I like my hair better when you do it.

I say frowning he chuckles.

Him: Stop sulking come here.

I lay next to him we are both facing the
roof. He is slowly drifting off to sleep.

Me: Ncumo. I say in a whisper.

Him: Bhabha.

He pulls me close to him.

Him: Uthini bhabha?

His eyes are closed.

Me: Can I move in with you?

Him: What?

He say sitting up straight.

Him: Bhabha are you serious?

Me: Am dead serious sthandwa sam.

He hugs me but not so tight.

Him: Bhabha are you sure? What about your fa-

Me: Am sure Ncumo besides he won't know.

I'll just disappear I mean Hlehle did it nzokohlulwa yintoni kemna.

Him: Bhabha you know your dad is-

Me: Luncumo we will make a plan maybe Hlehle might help cause naye she just vanished in the middle of the night.

Him: So you'll talk to her?

Me: Yeah I'll talk to her.

Yep Tar Lurra got what her wanted am moving in with him I hope I won't get in trouble for this.

Insert 37.



Mbali's POV.



I look up at Ncumo to see if he is not nervous about the pregnancy results. The nurse is looking at the pregnancy test like she is waiting for something to happen, am not pregnant, I know I can't be. Am sitting on the edge of the chair, waiting nervously. I bite my lower lip and close my eyes. I don't see myself being a mom shem, not at this age. Ncumo has his hands in his pockets and this huge smile on his cute lips he is standing.

Honestly I wouldn't have agreed to come here if I knew we were going to do a pregnancy test but I ended up agreeing to doing the test so I could prove to him that am not pregnant. The nurse turns to look at us with a smile on her face.

Her: You are pregnant mam.

What!? No, no I must be deaf. I didn't hear correctly, I know she didn't say am pregnant, I think something is wrong with my ears.

Me: Excuse me!

Her: You are pregnant ntombi.

Tears fall from both my eyes.

Me: No, no am not pregnant. This has to be a mistake. Am not pregnant.

Her: You are sisi.

Me: Mam you made a mistake, am not pregnant, I don't want a baby!

Ncumo sighs.

Him: Come here babe. He says opening his arms for a hug.

He holds me so tight and kisses the top of my head.

Me: Ncumo I don't want a baby. I can't have a baby, not now.

Him: Kengoku uzothini bhabha?

Me: I want to terminate, please let me terminate.

Him: You are not terminating, okay babe?

He says wiping my tears.

Me: Ncumo do you understand my entire life is ruined! This baby is going to make things worse for man, I have it bad already! My dad will kill me Ncumo!

I say pulling out of the hug.

Him: You no longer live with your dad, remembered?

Oh yeah. Him and his kind of convinced me to live with them which I really hate.

Me: What do I tell Simthandile, my grandmother, my uncles? What do I tell my family mmh?

Him: You don't have to tell them, ndiza kubaxelela ngokwam bhabha.

Me: What are you going to tell your grandmother? 'Oh mom I impregnated some high school kid I recently started dating' and you think she's going to be cool with that?

Him: She knows bhabha, she is the one who suggested we do a pregnancy test.

Me: Wow! So kokwenu nisela itea ngegama lam!? Xa kuphele incoko uMbaliyothando iba yi'hot topic!

Him: Sukhala kaloku mntuwam.

He is so calm and am losing my mind.

Me: Babe I can't keep the baby you know that. My family will ditch me.

Him: Me and gramms are your family bhabha.

Me: Ncumo I don't want the baby you know my dad-

Him: Stop using your dad as an excuse! We both know you don't want the baby for your own selfish reasons!

He is so pissed, his veins are popping out and his eyes are teary. He takes my hands into his, he kisses both of them.

Him: Bhabha you are keeping this baby, our baby, my baby.

He is back to his whispering.

Me: Am not keeping any baby! I don't want this baby! You don't even know how I feel about keeping your baby.

I can't stop crying. If dad ever finds out ndimithi he'll probably kill me. Wait, they will beat the fuck out of me till I pass out, wake me with a bucket of water, kick me till I lose this baby, strangle me and smash my head against the wall and burry me in the back yard.

Him: I might not know how you feel about keeping the baby but I know you'll fall in love with him before he is even born.

Her: Terminate sisi, ibingekho kwale ikumithisa usemncinci. Ufuna ntoni endodeni endela kangaka mntana ndini.

He chuckles a little.

Him: Jonga asizunye-

I cut him off before he even finished his statement. Usile lo angamyuca u'nurse wabantu.

Me: Ncumo hayi!

Him: Bhabha I've seen how you look at babies, they make you happy, I know that. I've seen you babysitting a lot of times.

Me: I was getting paid Ncumo.

Him: Act like you are getting paid for carrying our son.

Me: Mphati I don't want to carry this baby, I don't even want this baby.

Him: Such a pity cause you'll carry my baby. You'll carry him for full 9 months or 10 months I don't know but according to my

knowledge first time mom's are most likely to give birth after 10 months.

Just imagine a whole fucken 10 months pushing a huge belly and walking around like a penguin. The back pains and all that weird pregnancy shit. The vomiting and cravings are bad enough for mna.

Me: Mam I want to abort.

I say focusing my attention on the nurse. She looks very disgusted.

Her: Good choice mntanam.

Him: She is not aborting sisi uyazigulisa nje lo.

Me: Am not ready to be a mom.

Her: Mam your reaction is nor-

Him: Hey, hey fokof we don't care about reactions. Kunya kwe reactions nawe ngaphezulu. She's keeping him, andizuva ngomntana mna.

Me: Ncumo the money am earning is not enough to take care of me and your baby.

Babies are expensive and I don't have that type of money.

Him: Stop acting like you are the only one who will be taking care of my baby! I failed a lot of people but I won't fail my own baby Mbaliyothando. Andisebenze ndiyavuma kodwa soze ndohlulwe ngumntana wam bhabha.

He blinks his tears away. He wants this baby so bad and I don't want him or her. I don't want a child am a child myself.

Me: I didn't say you are a failure nor-

Him: Mam am sure you have a lot of patients waiting for you outside. Sorry for delaying you mam, masambe bhabha.

Damn why does he have to be this controlling. We make our way out, am so pissed I need to talk to my brothers am sure they'll accompany so I can abort this fucken baby.

Me: Ncumo I don't want to keep this baby. I don't want the baby.

Him: Yoh tough sis cause you don't have a choice.

Me: This baby will ruin my entire life. Am not ready to be a mom.

Him: People who don't want babies don't lock you in when you try to pull out.

Me: Emotionally am not ready to be a mom.

Him: You won't find them screaming ahhh mhhh, they don't scream o'fuck me harder.

People who don't want babies aren't having sex.

Me: Yhoo Luncumo.

Him: And abaziceleli njengawe.

I open my eyes a little there is an empty space next to me. Ncumo already woke up I have this terrible headache from all the crying I've been doing I don't want a baby. I turn around and he's sitting on the couch he is staring at the roof. He is crying, I hope

it's not the baby thing cause I don't a baby.
I get up from the bed.

Me: Hey, what's wrong. I say wiping his
tears.

He pulls me to rest my head on his chest.

Him: Am fine bhabha.

Me: You are not fine Ncumo. Talk to me.

Him: Am fine babe. Are you and my baby
fine?

I freeze for a moment.

Me: Yeah we are fine.

Him: Are you hungry baby?

Me: Am not hungry Ncumo. I want to know
what's stressing you.

Him: Bhabha are you sure you want to abort?

Are you sure it's what you want?

Honestly am not sure if it's what I want. I
heard ancestors punish you for aborting.

That scars me to death that I'll be punished
for the rest of my life for aborting.

Me: Honestly I don't know babe, am not sure.

Him: Please don't abort bhabha.

Me: Babe my life is complicated right now, I can't bring a baby on Earth not now.

Him: Bhabha we will fix whatever is wrong in your life.

I hate this! Why do I have to hurt his feelings for my dad who doesn't even care about me. He is right I want to abort for my own selfish reasons. How did I get so cruel! He has been crying for his baby am so selfish! I can't believe I made someone I love cry cause I was only thinking for myself!

Me: I'll think about it Ncumo. Am not promising anything.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 38.



Mbali's POV.





Him: Ndiyanithanda baby mama. He says kissing my belly.

Me: Nathi siyakuthanda tatakhe. I say smiling.

Him: I'll see you later, okay bhabha.

I nod. He kisses me and makes his way out.

I decided to keep my baby and it's the best decision I've ever made. I so love this baby.

Ncumo's grandmother called him she wanted to discuss something serious with him. Am

meeting up with Simmy, so I can tell her

about the pregnancy I've been hiding it. Am

4 months pregnant I have this cute baby

bump. Only my brothers, Vuyolwam and

Someleze know, I'll also have to tell Hlehle. I

put on a lime hoodie and tie my braids up. Oh

me and Ncumo moved to his house, just a

simple 8 roomed house. I make myself food

while watching TV. Lonke calls to inform me

they are coming over late. They've been keeping me company since Ncumo is always busy securing the bag. December in Gauteng is so boring for mna. At least it's the 5 Dec and on the 9 we are leaving for Eastern Cape and I didn't even have a say in this. I make my way to the taxi rank. Things are so hard for mna. People are always gossiping about how I should have just closed my legs and focused on my books. Some calling me a slut. I know falling pregnant at this age is wrong but we didn't plan this. Am trying so hard not to cry. The Zulu arrogant taxi drivers always have something to say and am already used to it. I even regret lifting this hoodie up, I don't even know why I lifted it up.

So Simmy is waiting for me at Steers. On my way am thinking of how am going to tell her am even thinking of going back maybe I should wait till I give birth, I don't know yho.

I finally decide on telling her today she might help me tell the entire family. From the strict Malume Daluxolo who would want to kill my boyfriend, to my dad who would try getting money from this and probably beat the fuck out of me, to my mom's mom who would preach for days about how I did the very same mistake my mom did, to aunty Ndumi who would "yoh" the situation cause she yohs everything Mam' Noyoh, to uncle Mzwandile who will demand Lobola money, to aunt Vuyelwa who will tell the entire village and add a little lies here and there, to mamkhulu Zofefe who will compare me to her kids who don't have any kids at 23, I have a lot to deal with yoh. As I walk in I spot Vuyolwam sitting with mom's look alike, they've been hanging out a lot these days. Simmy is staring at the poor guy am sure he feels uncomfortable right now. I greet them. Me: He looks like mom, right?

She slowly turns to look at me.

Her: He sure does. Come on give me a hug I haven't seen you in a very, very long time.

She says getting up from her chair.

My phone rings from my handbag, I answer it.

Vuyo: Stop shaking Mbaliyothando.

Me: Am not.

Vuyo: Breath you'll be fine mntase.

Akushushu for i'hoodie, awutshi?

It's really hot yoh but am sick and tired of all the nasty comments people make. Like can they just shut the fuck up.

Me: It's hot Vuyo but abantu.

Vuyo: Abantu abatheni? Bangephi kuyo yonke lento? Awumithiswanga ngabantu but ubhuti Luncumo.

Me: I know but-

Her: Baby stop trying to please people show your first born off. Show your baby bump

off and not give a fuck about it. Let people talk.

I nod.

Her: Awutatazeli Mbali.

She says laughing.

Me: Abantu bayathetha Vuyo. What if she knows? You know she'll be so damn disappointed.

Her: Remember Kelly said "abanye abantu baphila ngomgosi" nabo abo uthetha ngabo yi'hobbie yabo le. Besides Simmy is really cool I don't think she'll judge.

Me: Which parent celebrates the pregnancy of her kid. I whisper the last part.

Her: Just tell her man and get it over and done with.

Me: I need to go.

I drop the call and look over at her table.

She winks at me.

I sit opposite her.

Me: How are you holding up?

Her: Am fine wena?

Me: Am good simmy.

Her: You said you have something to tell me.

Me: Something to tell you? Ohh.....

I say biting my nails.

Me: No man I just wanted us to catch up.

Nothing serious.

Her: Well I have something to tell you.

Me: Yeah.

Her: Me and Nkosinathi are getting married on the 16th December.

Me: Didn't you cancel the wedding?

Her: We did but we fixed things and we decided to carry on with the wedding.

Me: I won't be available on that day.

Her: Arghh don't tell me you are going to work. She says annoyed.

Me: Am not going to work, am going to Eastern Cape with my brothers.

She smiles widely.

Her: That's amazing! We are having a traditional wedding back home.

She says with so much excitement.

Me: Uhm Simmy.

Her: Baby.

Me: I won't be able to be your bridesmaid.

Vuyolwam shouts "what?" but she quickly turns her attention to Zano....no not Zano I think he is Sandile Mkhize.

Her: Wait why?

Me: Simmy I gained a lot of weight this past few months and I don't think I fit into my dress.

Her: You can still lose the weight Mbali.

Please don't ditch me I really want you to be my bridesmaid.

Me: I can't lose the weight Simmy. It's-

Her: Why Mbali? Everyone can lose weight. I know you won't be able to lose weight in such a short notice maybe we can get you a new dress.

Me: That won't work also Simmy.

Her: Why hee? We can make it work Mbali.

Me: Am pregnant Simmy. I can't be out there in a bridesmaid dress looking like this huge-

Her: Wait you are pregnant?

Me: Uhm...ye...yes. I say sniffing.

I wipe my tears.

Her: When did this happen? How far are you?

Me: Am..4...4 months pregnant.

I say biting my lower lip.

Her: Omg. Does your dad know?

Me: He doesn't.

I say looking down.

Her: So you've been hiding your bump from them? Mbali you know if he finds out he'll kill you.

Me: I know.

Her: Arghh Mbali! You should have told me when you found out. You can't live with them. We need to get you out of there.

Me: Me and Hlehle no longer live with them. Hlehle packed her bags in the middle of the night and left weeks before I decided I wanted to move in with Ncumo.

Her: Whose the father? Does he know about the baby? Does he even care about what your dad will do when he finds out?

Me: Luncumo Mphati. Yes he knows.

Her: So where do you live?

Me: With Ncumo-

Her: And his family? Wow Mbaliyothando! You could have moved into my apartment than staying with the whole Mphati family.

Me: Am not living with the whole family. He has his own house.

Her: Does he have a job? Can he provide for you, the baby and himself?

Me: Simthandile just stop with the questions!

Her: No Mbali you can't live with him! Is he planning on getting a job to take care of you and your baby? You can't live with someone who still depends on his mom! Mbali how do you go and get pregnant for someone who doesn't have plans? Hayi mani Mbali? Can he afford your cravings nje? You guys live off your salary.

Me: Me and Ncumo are coping! We are fine Simmy! Just don't disrespect him like that! Why am I crying? Damn Simmy is so disrespectful. She must just stick to her freaking lane.

Me: Just focus on your wedding and I'll focus on my broke boyfriend, my baby onatata ongena future ne plans, and myself one boyfriend eyondliwa ndim no mamakhe. Her jaw drops. Vuyo gasps, their table is not far from ours. I wipe my tears and get up going to the bathroom, I wash my face. Am going home. The nerve this woman has to

judge Ncumo. As I walk out I bump into bhuti Lunga and his friends.

Lunga: Nana wam.

Me: Hey bhuti Lunga.

Ntando: Mbali.

Me: Bhuti Ntando, unjani?

Ntando: Am good nana, wena?

Me: Am fine bhuti.

A part of me really wants to ask him why is he friends with such dummies. He is way to smart to be their buddy.

Ntando: Rha yiza ubhuti akuh.age nongqiza.

He says opening his arms for a hug. Lona thinks am his sister. I hug him but he pulls out quickly.

Ntando: Umithi nongqiza?! Hayi hayi khulula le jersey ubhuti abona.

I lift my hoodie up a little.

Ntando: Uyafihla uMphati akatsho xa emithisile. Bethuna uMphati omncinci. Am sure yikwekwe lo.

Me: Hayi hayi bhuti Ntando yintombi le.

Zwane clicks his tongue and walks away.

Lunga: Yoh Mbali how do you get pregnant for such a lowlife?

Ntando: Voetsek Lunga! Yintoni le ingaka oyifuna ku Mphati? Awunambulelo yazi kunyakwakho!

Lunga looks at me with disappointment filled in his eyes.

Ntando: Usuke kwalapha Lunga!

Bhuti Lunga walks away.

Ntando: Ungabahoyi aba yevha nongqiza.

I nod.

Ntando: Awulambanga?

Me: Ndihluthi bhuti and am rushing somewhere.

Ntando's POV.

She hugs me one last time and walks away. I get in my car and follow behind Lunga and Zwane's cars. We end up at a club. We park

our cars next to each other. We settle down at the corner Lunga orders a lot of alcohol.

Me: What the fuck is wrong with you two?

Lunga she is your younger sister for fuck sake. Couldn't you pretend to be happy for her at least.

Lunga: She had to fall pregnant for that bastard.

Me: A bastard she loves. She knew damn well what she was doing when she fell pregnant for him and decided to keep the baby.

Zwane: Shut up Ntando!

Me: She doesn't love you can you get that shit in your stupid head!

Zwane: She loves me I know she does.

Lunga: We have to come with a plan.

Me: Plan yantoni? Akho plan idingekayo apha Mbali and Mphati know exactly what they are doing.

Zwane: She doesn't know what she's doing.

He's a drug dealer for fuck sake.

Me: He is your boss. Our fucken boss. Nawe you are a fucken drug dealer.

Lunga: We need to get evidence and give it to the cops then Zwane will finally get Mbali.

Me: Lunga are you really going to do that to your sister? Your own sister?

Zwane: Then me and her will raise our baby together.

Me: Mphati's baby. Gez' eyihlekisa awuthandwa.

Lunga: Whose side are you on kanti wena?

Me: Akho macala apha. Nisukela inyoko emgodini wayo.

Zwane: She's mine, Mphati must stay the fuck away from my girlfriend. Lunga we have to do something ngo Mphati!

Lunga: Next week Saturday Godmother will give him the merch and he'll obviously give it to us.

Zwane: We all know he doesn't touch the merch with his own hands. He uses gloves.

Lunga: We will have to make sure he touches it with his hands then.

Me: Mphati is not that stupid.

Lunga: Shut up! We aren't talking to fake friends!

Me: If Mphati gets arrested y'all are dead people walking.

Zwane: Is that a threat?

Me: I don't make threats. I make promises. I gulp down my whiskey and take my car keys.

Me: Remember this.

I open the door mom and dad are kissing on the couch. I sit on the opposite couch and turn the TV on. They jump and turn to look at me.

Mom: How long enough have you been here?

Me: Mom why do you hate my brother so much? Huh what did my younger brother do to you.

Her: I hope this is not about that Kasi lowlife boy and his mom.

She says rolling her eyes.

Me: You are his mom that's his grandmother.

Utya u'life nge'spoon while he is out there selling dru....

I stop myself before saying drugs.

Her: He is not my fucking son. Do you know how much pain his dad caused me.

Me: You hate your son because of what his dad did to you. Wow mama the you call yourself a parent!

Him: Don't raise your voice to your mom!

Me: Ngoba tata? Why can't I raise my voice to her? She's just a useless woman! She left her own son for your hard earned money!

She slaps me.

Me: Wenza odume ngazo vele.

Him: Ntandoyethu!

Me: She's useless vele. All she does is chewing your money.

Her: Are you calling me a gold digger?

Me: Uyiyo vele.

He slaps. I chuckle.

Him: You don't get to talk to my wife like that.

Me: Mom do you even know what type of job he does to survive?

Her: I don't care Luncumo Mphati can do whatever the fuck he wants to do.

Me: You've always wanted a grandson well his girlfriend is pregnant. Just a few days ago you called me useless claiming I can't get a girl pregnant cause wena you want a grandson. There you are my younger brother gave you a grandson.

I hope this fixes their relationship. Mom's always hated him, I don't know why even from a young age. I was 4 when mom had him. After his dad dumped her, she dumped him. In this house they can sit the whole day and

gossip about how he won't make it in. I hope he disappoints them.

Me: Dad are you sure am your son?

He chokes on his saliva.

Insert 39.



Simthandile's POV.



After Mbali left I was left alone. Am honestly not looking forward to going back home, I thought we were gonna stay a few hours and catch up but we didn't. Am not even working cause Nkosi said I must quit my job, am a housewife now. I take my bag and walk out, I get in my car and slam the door as I scream.

Me: My life is a mess! I say hitting the steering wheel.

Me: Simthandile this is not you! You are not weak! You can't let a bloody dickhead break you!

I say hitting my forehead.

Am honestly sick and tired of my life. I wish I could switch positions with someone. I drive to my apartment. Oh gosh, oh gosh now I have to cook for Nkosinathi, am so sick and tired of being his slave but what can I do he'll kill me, my mom, my brothers, Mbali and the rest of my family, am not marrying him for myself but for my entire family. One last thing I also have a bodyguard he follows me everywhere and it's really starting to piss me off. I'll just make stamp esine cremora & potatoes. As am cooking I try calling Mbali but her phone takes me straight to voicemail. I sigh, I guess she's still mad about what I said earlier, I didn't really mean to offend

her kodwa how could she live with her boyfriend who still depends on his mom. OoMwali don't know their worth, they don't value themselves.

As am preparing a hot bath for myself Nkosi walks in drained as hell. He smiles at me.

Him: My beautiful wife.

Me: Myeni wam. I say faking a smile.

Him: Am joining you today.

I nod, I don't want to go against anything he says or I'll get a beating I already have to many scars in my body.

Him: How did your meeting with Mbali go?

Me: Fine.

Him: That's so cold Simmy. He says kissing my neck.

Him: Tell me how was it, how did it go?

Me: Honestly it was fine.

He kisses me while untie my gown. Am left with my bra my breasts are out.

Me: Am not in the mood Nkosinathi.

Him: Says who?

Me: Say me.

Him: Am the only one who gets to say whether you are in the mood or not.

Me: Brain mani! His phone rings disturbing him, he walks out while answering it.

Him: Yolanda I said I'll visit the kids.....yhe mfazi khange ndithumele mali kuleveki iphelileyo.....iphela njani iR10 000 ngeveki Yolanda!? Hayi niyadika nezinjababa zakho oko nifuna imali..... Ndiyakuthanda nam nkosokazi.

He chuckles and drops the call.

Not this Yolanda woman again. He even has kids with her and he didn't even bother to tell me.

Luncumo's POV.

Q: You know you'll have to stop dealing cause this is really dangerous.

Me: I know. I'll replace the money I lost then am leaving the game for the sake of my baby and my bhabha.

They laugh.

Zuu: Kutsho indoda etshate ingakhuphanga lobola madoda.

He says laughing.

Me: Usisirhama kodwa wena. He laughs.

Me: Welile really fucked me up madoda.

They laugh.

Honestly speaking I was suppose to start my business a few months ago but my ex girlfriend Welile stole my money and spent it with her boyfriend. She stole Godmother's stash so now I've been trying to pay the drugs and replace the money I lost. Hee girls will leave you broke and broken turned out the girl had a boyfriend when we started dating and she used to spend my money with

her real boyfriend. Then she found out about the drugs and the money she stole my whole fucken money and drugs and escaped the country with her real boyfriend and they left their precious daughter behind. Lost R650 000 because of pussy. No man pussy is a man's weakness.

Q: She really did ndoda and now you are stuck with Godmother.

Zuu: We all know Godmother won't let you go. I mean you are one of the few best dealers she has.

Me: I know mfethu and she might hurt bhabha or even tell her about the drugs.

Damnit!

Them: Yintoni!?

Me: I have a bag of cocaine pha kum and a bag full of cash. uMakhulu might find it-

Q: And if she does find it we all know konuka umsunu.

Zuu: Angakungomba. He say laughing his ass out.

He is not lying, uyabetha lamfazi umdala or umncinci she doesn't care uyagalela qha yena.

Zuu: Why do you keep money endlini vele wena? What banks for kanti Luncumo Mphati?

Q: Do you think he knows what a bank look like. Ukhe waya nje wena ebank?

Me: I can't deposit R80k each and every fucking forth night. Nzawuthi ndiyinyaphi imali engaka?

Godmother pays us forth nightly and it depends on how much cocaine you sold. Mna I sell a lot of cocaine but because I owe her she deducts R70k all the time kum she's suppose to be paying me R150k if not R230k cause I sell a lot. You know if somebody told me I would be one of the best cocaine sellers around Gauteng 6 years ago I would have a laughed and choke on my saliva.

Q: Kengoku uzoyithini le mali ne cocaine?

Me: Andiyazi Qaphela. I can't even bury it in my backyard cause bhabha is always around.

Q: Zuu is she around now? Bhabha! Bhabha!
He yells looking around.

Q: Nope akekho.

Me: No mani i'bag isepha kwamama.

Zuu: You aren't serious about hiding the money moss wena.

I check my watch.

Me: Gents you need to go, Mr Mudau will be here any minute from now.

Mr Mudau is a doctor he has his own surgery. He buys drugs from me, he is not the only one who is at the top and buys drugs from what my mom would describe as a Kasi lowlife. Mr Anderson a journalist who has his own journalist company, Ms Zuma a Zulu female business woman, Mrs Dube a politician married with 3 kids, Mr Buys a business tycoon married 7 kids & three wives, Mr

Xaba a math teacher at bhabha's school,
Zolani "Zinc" Dube a soccer player an
international one, Rap-vine a 23 y/o rapper,
Bella Scott a model daughter to the minister
of health even the minister himself buys this
shit, Mr Adams a judge, a whole fucken judge
bethuna, uMr all rise in court?, Ms Ndlovu
and Mr Ndevu are cops. I could go on for
days counting well-known people who come
back ekasi because they want drugs.

Q: We will be back ntwana.

I nod.

Zuu takes the Tupperware with braaid meat.

Zuu: I'll bring back uTupper wakho.

Q: I thought you bought lenyama for
ubhabha.

Me: I did fethu andiyazi uyaphi nayo lo.

Zuu: Soze ndiyeke inyama ndiyibona.

Ndiphume ndihambe as if khange ndibone
nyama kunganyiwa. Ndishiye inyama

indinjongile isithi eat me Zuu baby, am all yours.

Me: Am sure nalonto imbi ingu Siphindile yakujonga yathi "ohh eat me baby, eat me Zuu baby, am all yours."

I say the last part with a girly voice while moaning.

They burst out laughing.

Q: Tf is that how you moan?

Nope, am tryna moan like ubhabha wam.

Me: Tsek! I throw my flops at him.

They laugh and walk out. Mr Mudau walks in, yerr lekaka baths with his perfume, cologne or body spray kodwa he swims in it.

Him: So this where you've been hiding Mphati.

Me: I don't remember saying come in and I don't remember you knocking. Hambo knock.a Mudau.

My phone beeps indicating there's a new message. I check it, it's from Q it reads like

"normalize not bringing your clients to your house, you are putting bhabha & yourself in danger" he sends another text "let it be the first & last time you bring your clients to your house, I hope sivene" I sigh he's right these people carry guns and have bodyguards actually inkabi zase hostel, hitmen izinja ezoyikwa ngamapolisa madoda. Am sure he has a whole gang waiting with guns outside. He texts again " had I known earlier I would have stopped that stupid meeting. Umuncu mani Luncumo, awuysebenzisi ingqondo nja." uzandiyuca ke lo.

Him: It was nice doing business with you Mphati. We shake hands. We hear a voice from the kitchen.

"Hayi babe ngamododa atheni anga ahleli phandle nezibhamu. They even had the nerve to search me."

She says walking into the dining room.

Her: Oh I didn't know you had company.

Whose this?

I was about to answer but Mr Mudau beat me to it.

Him: Am Peace Mudua. A friend to Mr Mphati.

Peace, kanti umjita ngu'peace he doesn't even have peace. He extends his hand for a handshake.

Her: Mmh....k. She's not buying it. She looks at him from head to toe and nods.

Mudau slowly takes his hand back with disappointment.

Her: Oooo-kay. She drags her okay.

Me: He is my investor bhabha.

Him: Yep, am his investor Ms Bhabha.

Me: Am going to take a nap. It was nice meeting you Mr Mudau.

She says walking to OUR bedroom. She comes back a few minutes later.

Her: I haven't seen Nyiko in a while. You'll find me at her house, one last thing tell your gun guys to leave.

She walk away.

Him: It was nice meeting you Ms Bhabha.

Me: Okay bhabha.

Him: She's pretty and disrespectful. Take your time and teach her manners. I see she's also pregnant, congratulations Mpathi, I see you don't shoot blanks my boy.

I roll my eyes.

Me: I think our business is done.

Him: I'll see you Mpathi my boy. He says walking out.

I throw myself on the couch.

Me: Yeah neh.

Vuyolwam's pov.

Me: Am so tired Sizwe my feet are killing me.

He laughs and sits next to me.

Him: Let me massage you.

Me: Wena wonke? Thee Sandile Mkhize massaging a girl from the ghetto? Wtf do you know about massaging?

I say laughing.

Him: A thing or two shawty.

Tsi uPop Smoke madoda.

Me: A thing or two you say Mr Mkhize.

He nods.

Him: So what's your friend's name? The one with a huge afro, the pregnant one.

Me: What do you want to know about her?

Him: Anything.

Me: Ok, she's Mbaliyothando Mandoyi a daughter to Luzuko Mandoyi & Mam'

Noluthando Mandoyi. She's-

Him: Do you have pictures of her mom?

Me: I don't but I can ask her to send them to me.

Lately Sandile has been asking a lot about Yothando and her family. I wonder what's

that all about. He passes me my phone. I text her she responds to my text immediately, the conversation drags for a little while she ends up sending me 7 pics of her mom. My jaw drops the woman is Sandile, no Sandile is the woman, what am trying to say is they are each other.

Me: Sandile.

Him: Vuvu.

Me: This woman is you. I mean she looks like you.

Him: Stop fooling with me Vuyolwam.

He says taking the phone from me. His jaw drops. He checks the photos more than 3 times.

Him: Who are the two little kids standing next to the lady. He says clicking on the photo that had 2 kids and Mbali's mom.

Him: My eyes are deceiving me. He says zooming in to the kids.

Him: Can you please ask her to send baby pics of herself.

Me: Ask her yourself.

He texts so fast. See how fast hackers in movies text that's how fast he texted Yothando & she responded immediately.

Him: Do you have any idea who these kids are?

He says showing me pictures of Yothando & brother.

Me: Ohh that's Yothando and her late brother.

Him: Late brother? His eyes pop.

He gets up.

Him: Vuvu I need to make a call. Damn where is this bloody phone.

Me: Here.

Him: Thank you.

He takes it and calls whoever the fuck he is calling.

Him: Mah..... Ngidinga the family's photo album.

Sandile never speaks proper Zulu, he always mixes languages. One sentence can have Zulu, English, Spanish, Afrikaans, French & Sotho he doesn't even see a problem with that.

Him: Mama ngiyidinga manje.....Ngicela niyifune manje it's an emergency.....am coming to fetch the album now.

He drops the call.

Him: Asambe Vuvu.

Me: Am staying behind.

He exits. I guess am all alone in this penthouse.

He walks in. He sits next to me.

Him: Please borrow me your phone. Actually text Yothando.

Me: Ngithini?

Him: Ask for her brothers baby pics please.

I text her. She responds with a simple "uzondidika, these are the only pictures I have of him" and 4 pics.

Me: Her brother was the cutest baby ever. Minxiza mani paroro.

Sandile looks at me with a wtf look.

Me: He was so cute damn probably the cutest baby I've seen my whole life.

Sandile rolls his eyes.

Me: My nunu..yho ke yenake akasemhle.

Sandile chuckles.

He pages through the album.

Him: Your phone please.

I pass him my phone.

Him: Vuvu is your friend sure that this kid is her brother?

Me: She's 1000% sure.

Him: She can't be my sister, can she?

Me: What?

Him: Nothing Vuvu.

I nod.

Him: Can you please give me her number it's an emergency. Me & her need to talk sooner or later.

Me: Sorry I can't.

Him: Please Vuyolwam. At least tell me where she stays.

Me: She lives with her boyfriend. You know where she works mocc.

Him: I do. Is she working tomorrow.

Me: She's doing two shifts tomorrow.

He nods.

Richard Mandoyi's POV.

"Richard Mandoyi." Says one of the prison warders.

I get up from my bed.

Me: Nogada.

Him: You have a visitor baba. He says opening the doors of hell for me. I make my way out.

This is shocking I haven't had any visitors in 3 years. The last visitor I had was my dear wife Noluthando but she hasn't come to see me in 3 years, I wonder what went wrong.

The last time she sent pictures of my daughter was when she was 14 and after that she never ever came to see me. I wonder how her and my daughter are surviving living with an animal like my brother, I hope they're fine. I see Mam' Mphati seated am sure she's my visitor, she waves at me, I guess I guessed right. I sit opposite her.

Me: Salukazi.

Her: Nyana, unjani Richard.

Me: Am fine makhulu, am fine. How are you holding up?

Her: Sayicenga nyana.

I nod.

Her: I have something to discuss with you nyana.

Me: Ok mama.

Her: So intombi yakho imithi & akasahlali kwakho.

Yoh Lord please tell me uMbali didn't become those wild girls who sleep around. That doesn't sound like her at all.

Me: Uyayazi uNoluthando lento mama?

She looks at me with disbelief.

Her: Awuyazi? She asks shocked.

Me: Intoni mama?

Her: Nolu passes away, 3 years ago sanalwam. I feel tears stinging and nobody told me she passed away.

Me: How's my daughter holding up mama?

How did she take it. Where does she live.

Her: She lives with her boyfriend. I can't answer your questions sanalwam only her & Luncumo can answer how she's holding up and how she took it.

Me: Your grandson?

She nods.

Me: Mama whose her boyfriend & why did she move out?

Her: Well your daughter started dating my grandson somewhere in June this year and she got pregnant recently. Apparently Luzuko has been abusing your daughter from the year her mom passed away till now.

Me: That little bastard! He first married my wife & turned her into his punching bag & now he turned my daughter into his punching bag.

I say hitting the table.

Her: We are fine sisi. She says to one of the prison guards/ warders.

Her: Luzuko beat her countless time before & after she started dating Luncumo. He got tired of seeing her bruised & he decided she'll move in with him but she was against it. A few weeks back before she started her final exams Luzuko beat her up so bad. I've never seen anything like that.

Me: You saw the scars with your own eyes?

Her: I did, they were so bad. Some purple, some pinks, some green. She didn't look like the free bhabha I saw at the mall with Ncumo.

Me: Bhabha?

Her: My son calls her bhabha.

She's a kid & she already went through a lot. I feel like I've failed her as a father.

Me: Does she know that Zano is alive not dead?

Her: Your son is alive. She says shocked.

Me: He's alive, my parents sold him to the highest bidder.

She gasps.

Her: They did what?

Me: Yes, I mean me & my wife were teens back then and my family needed money they used my son as a ticket out of poverty.

Her: Oh nyana.

Me: Mama can you please bring my daughter over.

Her: I will talk to her.

Me: Thank you.

Warder: Times up.

Me: That's my cue to leave mama.

I say getting up. I thought I would see the love of my life again but life had other plans.

She was the first person I wanted to see when I come out of this hell hole.

Insert 40.



Mbali's POV.



What's with people & wanting to see me this week, baveni? A few days ago I got a call from makhulu she said Richard Mandoyi is

asking to see me at first I didn't agree the very same day Vuyolwam called saying Sandile Mkhize wants to see me & then boom Mr Mandoyi and his family want to see me, Luncumo was so pissed "I mean after everything they've done to you & they have the nerve to call & ask for a meet up, I hope you didn't agree Mbaliyothando" he was so pissed he didn't even eat his supper. Now am at work doing what am famous for, serving am so tired I've been up all morning, am so tired my break is in 30 minutes, I serve the rest of my tables. Sizwe walks in as am serving my table, a old white couple they are my regular customers & they tip shame they aren't stingy.

Me: Am almost done.

He nods and settles opposite this couple.

"Your baby daddy?" Asks the old lady.

I laugh a little.

Me: No, he's a regular customer but he said he had something important to talk to me about.

Her: I thought he was the daddy.

Me: Unfortunately, he's not.

I finish up & make my way to Sandile, he's wearing a very shiny suit he's suits are really annoying I feel like he's KK, who the hell in their right mind wears blingly & shiny suits.

Me: Bhuti Sandile. I say sitting on the opposite chair.

Him: Ntombi encane.

Me: Ufuna ngikusize ngani bafo?

Him: I have a few questions to ask you, about your family.

Me: Ohh sowaba lipolisa?

Him: No.

Me: My break is not that long so can we please get straight to the point.

He sighs.

Him: Well you see I've been thinking a lot lately.

What's that got to do with me.

Me: About?

Him: I think we are related, I know it's crazy but-

Me: It's really stupid. NdinguMxhosa wena unguMzulu asizalani tuu.

Him: You once said I look like your mom & you weren't lying.

Me: I did say you look like her but I don't remember saying we are related. Sundifaka amazwi emlonyeni, tchi uxoka ngam.

Him: You had a brother, right?

Me: Yes.

Him: What happened to him?

Me: He passed on at a very young age.

Him: I doubt he is dead, I mean can you tell me where he was buried? Have you went to home affairs to check if he's dead or not?

Me: We haven't but my grandparents said so.

Him: They said so but they didn't show you the grave. Don't you think he's alive?

Me: Yhewethu Zano passed on he was buried.

Him: Can I ask you a few questions about him.

Me: 4 questions only.

Him: How old is he? Where was he last seen? When is his birthday.

Me: His 23, Eastern Cape am not sure about the exact location, his birthday is on the same day as yours. I stalk you that's why I know your birthday.

He nods.

Him: I got everything that I wanted.

Me: Oh cool.

He gets & walks out. He returns a few minutes later.

Me: Did you forget something?

Him: The attitude! Yini ngiyakudina?

Me: No, not at all.

Him: Can you please organise me a meeting with one of the elders from your family?

Me: Me & my dad aren't on speaking terms, if you want me to talk to him you'll have to pay & to meet him you'll also have to pay up.

He laughs.

Him: So Vuvu wasn't lying, you really love cash.

Me: She wasn't, so are you paying up or?

Him: I'll pay.

Me: Good.

Him: Can you please give me your numbers, I'll keep in touch.

I write my numbers on a piece of baby & hand it to him.

"My crush from the other day, akapheli apha." I startle & turn around.

Me: Mam' Lili.

She laughs.

Her: Did you give him your number?

Me: Yes.

Her: Do you have his numbers. I need to kill salt mntase. You see this thing of marry a

guy 16 years older than you isn't working out. Just imagine have to quit sex because you married an oldie.

I laugh.

Me: Lindi!

Her: Yini? I mean am still young, I need sex wethu Mbali. Wena uzimince ngayo ude unobufakazi.

Haybo lomakhulu.

Me: Lindi umdala, isex yeyabantwana.

Her: Life begins at 40. I wanna get laid, I haven't got laid in a very long time uNdabezitha sekagugile & isex iyamhlula.

Me: Whee Lindiwe Zulu umdala mawungaka.

Her: Isex ayina age Mbaliyothando. All I want is a good dick, nothing more, nothing less.

Me: You know he's dating Vuyolwam?

Her: They're dating, I spoke to Vuyo she said they are still getting to know each other. While they are getting to know each

other, mna I must get the D ndisuke endleleni.

Me: I give up on you.

Simthandile's POV.

Am so exhausted, Nkosi parks in front of his homestead. We are in Eastern Cape, it's still early but everyone is already up & they are very busy. I fix my head wrap. The kids run towards the car.

Him: Are you read nkosikazi?

I nod yawning.

Him: Masambe ke.

He gets out of the car & comes to my side to open the door for me.

Me: Thank you.

He hugs all the kids then they run to me.

"You are aunty Thandile, right?" Asks one of the kids.

Me: Yes, am aunty Thandile.

"Am Ovayo." I nod.

A little baby girl opens her arms for me to pick her up. I pick her up.

Me: You so cute. What's your name?

Ovayo answers.

Vayo: She's Emihle.

Him: Ovayo let Simmy come in, take her bags to our room.

She nods and asks the others to help her with the bags. I make my way to the hut with Emihle in my hands.

Me: Molweni. I greet looking down. They all greet, non of them are bitch they are very welcoming. We sit there & talk for a little while.

Him: I want to introduce you to someone important.

Me: Ndicela uhlamba kuqala.

I hand the old lady Emihle who is now sleeping.

The someone important is not staying at his house. I sigh.

Me: How far are we? Am so tired, my body hurts.

Him: I know, sorry you'll get some rest after meeting the three important women in my life.

Me: Okay. I adjust the chair so I can sleep. I feel someone slightly shaking me. I open my eyes.

Him: Sesifikile. He says kissing my forehead. I get up. We get into the main house hand in hand.

Him: Pamela! He calls out.

Some lady walks in. She also chubby just like me. They hug & kiss haybo he comes back & sit next to me he runs his hands on my thighs.

Him: Simthandile this is my first wife Pamela, Pam this is Simmy.

Me: First wife? I ask shocked.

Him: Yes, my first wife.

I nod. I don't want to cause any drama he might beat me up.

Her: Hey sisi am Pam.

She says opening her arms for a hug, I get up & hug her.

Him: Pam we'll come back late.

Pam nods & hugs me again.

Him: Let's leave the car here we will fetch it later.

Me: No problem.

We walk to the house next door. He knocks once & let's himself in, we hear moans and groans coming from the bedroom. He takes a whip & a electric wire. I keep quit & follow behind him only because he ordered me to, he opens the door slowly. He stands there balancing on the door frame the woman goes up I guess it's woman on top time, I try not to laugh but this is so hilarious. As she turns

she sees Nkosi whose fuming, she stops & walks to him.

Her: Get dressed wena & leave.

The boy quickly picks his clothes up & attempts to get dressed.

Him: Don't boyza carry on with what you were doing. He says sitting on the headboard.

Him: You were still on the woman on top part carry on.

The boys freezes.

Him: I SAID GO ON WITH WHAT YOU WERE DOING TAKE OFF YOUR PANTS AND GET ON TOP OF HER!

He says hitting the woman with the electric wire. The boy slowly removes his pants, shaking & crying. This guy is till a kid.

Him: A GRADE 11 KID YOLANDA! YINTONI ENDINGAKWENZILI YONA?!

He roars.

Me: Ndiceli i' toilet. I say in a whisper.

Nkosi points me to a long drop toilet outside. I walk out of the room and settle on the couch, the moans & groans increase. Me being me I get up and peak a little while Nkosi is naked they are having a threesome the Yolanda woman is begging Nkosi to stop. Nkosi is fucking both Yolanda & the boy. He tells the boy to bend into doggy style position, I can't watch I walk away the boy screams. After a little while they all come to join me in the lounge with the little guy & Yolanda butt naked Nkosinathi is mentally unstable.

Him: Yolanda undenza kanje you cheat on me with a high school kid? Yintoni le akwenzela yona mna ndingayenziyo.

She just looks at him & roll her eyes back and forth.

Him: YONELA!

Her: Uthi na wena? She says chilled as ever.

Next thing Nkosinathi is on top of her beating her up, the boy is no where to be seen he comes back wearing his pants & runs out.

Me: NKOSINATHI MYEKE! I scream he carries on.

I run outside and scream, Pamela is the first one to get here to calm her husband down.

Nkosi throws one punch at her she's bleeds immediately, more neighbors come out.

Someone called the police we can hear sirens.

Pamela hugs me so tight.

Pam: Are you fine sisi? Did he hit you?

Me: Am fine sisi.

The cops get here & separate them. Nkosi gets arrested I hope he doesn't ever come out.

Pam: Let's hope he rots in jail, he thinks we are his punching bags.

I nod in agreement.

Luncumo's POV.

Bhabha walks in drained as hell she kicks off her shoes & sits on my lap. She plants a kiss on my lips, she unbuttons her work top then throws it on the floor.

Her: Am so tired & hungry. She says wrapping her hands around my neck & lays her head on my shoulder.

Me: Ufuna utya ntoni?

Her: Amagwinya ane atchaar namathumbu.

Me: Nzawafumana phi mna amagwinya ngelixesha? She shrugs.

Me: Let me call gramms to see if unawo.

She smiles.

I call her & she said she has them.

Her: Uyowalanda?

Me: Ewe.

Her: Enkosi. She says kissing me, she pulls out & removes my hands from her butt.

Her: Amagwinya, sex will follow.

I laugh. She read my mind.

Her: Ndiyohlamba.

Am almost home, I stop on my tracks when I see a police van stop at my house. The gate is locked they kick it, Bhabha comes out in my gown pissed as hell they talk for a little while she ends up opening the gate they march inside with their guns. I chuckle & slowly walk to my house.

"Akekho uLurra & am hundred percent sure he doesn't sell any cocaine." Bhabha says as I approach the police van, I stand next to the gate & call Zuu he doesn't answer I contact Q, he answers.

Me: Jonga I don't have time to talk or explain but there are cops at my house and they are looking for cocaine. The only thing endiyicelayo ugade ubhabha till I sort out this whole thing.

Him: Uthini Luncumo?

Me: There are cops at my house looking for me with real guns.

"Yhewethu lungisani lefurniture nifike ihlele kakuhle! Nzawukhiya lomnyango qhiba ndiyolala ningathi anditshongo!"

She says sipping on her water she's standing at the door ready to lock.

Me: Don't forget to inform Godmother.

Him: Am on my way.

Me: Sho. I drop the call and walk inside the yard the door is locked hayibo ukhiye nyani lomntu. I knock really hard.

Her: I hope you are not a cop cause I'll kill-
The door opens.

Her: Ufike kakuhle thetha nababantu bakho.

Me: Yiza ne hoodie ne sweat pants.

Her: For ntoni?

Me: Kuyabanda entrongweni plus I need to protect my virginity.

I take one fat cake from the plastic, I need to be full bayalamba abantu pha. She brings me what I asked for & a turtle neck I wear the sweaters phezikwe jean.

Me: Madoda uti umfazi niyandifuna. I say settling n the couch.

Mr Manzi: Luncumo Mphati ndoda yamadoda.

Q walks in followed by Zuu. I hope Q shuts up inempempe lechap.

Q: Amarhata madoda kwenzenjani savakwashelwa yini. Sigeze phi Mr Manzi, Captain wonke bafethu kunice moss apha. He says biting his apple.

Mr Manzi: Luncumo Mphati you are under arrest anything you-

Q: Do or say will be held against in you the court of law siyazi ndoda culo lango 1900.

Kanitsho why is he under arrest?

Mr Manzi: His finger prints were found on cocaine.

Q: That's not solid enough.

Bhabha is shocked and scared at the same time.

Me: Ndiright bhabha, nzaba right suwara ngam.

She nods slowly.

I have Mr Manzi investigating me.

Him: Just give me your boss's name. I promise we'll protect you and your baby mama.

Me: Which boss are you talking about? Do I look like a worker, am a boss bafo.

Him: Are you sure you want to die in jail for someone else's sins.

Me: God died for our sins ndiyothuka xa uthetha nge'sins.

Him: JUST TALK DAMMIT!

Me: I won't talk till my lawyer gets jonga into endingayaziyo sisilungu samapolisa but I won't talk till I see my lawyer in front of me.

Him: Call your lawyer then.

Me: That's the thing I don't have one.

Where do you guys get lawyers vele?

Him: Mphati I can get you a state lawyer.

Me: What's the point of a trial if am getting a state lawyer? You want me to lose ingekaqali itrial.

Him: Mphati just give us the name of your boss-

Me: Ndoda anginalanga lonke. Can I call my wife at least.

He lets me call bhabha, she answers you can tell she was crying.

Her: He...hello. Her voice is cracking.

"Sukhala mani u'right aphakhayo uLuncumo."

Says Q.

Am sure sedikiwe nguQ akakwazi uthula lowa.

Mbali's POV.

I wake up to voices whispering I know these voices but they don't belong to bhuti Q or

bhuti Zuu. I sigh and get up from our bed. I wear Ncumo's gown & walk to the kitchen to my surprise Lunga & Gezeyihlekise are in the kitchen making themselves comfortable. I walk back to my room and inayo tuu i'energy yabo, I guess bhuti Q & bhuti Zuu went back to their homes. I gather some strength & go back to the kitchen am so hungry. I don't even greet them.

Me: Nifuna ntoni apha?

Zwane: We are here for you sthandwa sam.

Me: Lungani nifuna ntoni kwaLuncumo?

Lunga: We all know Zwane is better than that bastard.

Me: Zwane is mentally unstable, he needs medical attention. He belongs in a mental asylum.

Zwane: Baby I belong in your heart. He says getting closer & closer.

Lunga: I'll leave you guys to it. He says walking out.

Zwane gets closer he's very close. He grabs my butt I slap him.

Me: Touch me again, I'll scream rape.

He pulls me to him & covers my mouth. He uses his other hand to untie my gown, am shedding tears I don't want to get raped. He pushes me against the wall pulling my PJ shorts down I try screaming but his hands are covering both my mouth & nose making it hard for me to scream he unbuckles his belt. Am crying these no one hear I hope someone appears before anything happens to me.

"He falls to the ground he's been shot, I lift my head up to check who shot him. Luncumo runs to me & hugs me "u'right bhabha?" He asks, I nod. "Gents take him to the warehouse ngizodila naye mselufu." the gents nod and drag him out one or two remain to clean the blood."

>>At the warehouse<<

"Luncumo walks in all the workers shake till they pee themselves. He's the hottest guy around all the chicks here sbwl him, I also sbwl him. He walks into the torture room and finds him tied to the chair. He firsts beat him to pulp and pours acid on him then cuts his fingers off and fries them on the braai stand he then cuts his tongue out then asks him to talk he doesn't respond he gets more pissed because he ain't answering. He takes his sword and chops Zwane's head off, Zwane screams as his head lands on the floor "I'll talk just glue my head back" says Zwane "good boy" responds Lurra. He takes a shoes glue from his pocket that he was using earlier on to glue his Louis Vuitton car he bought from China ka 1million so the house windows could stop cracking. He glues the head back perfectly. One thing about him he's is a perfectionist. Him & Zwane talk &

Zwane mistakenly says something wrong about bhabha he gets angry and she him on his heart then take the heart & eats along with the bullet."

>>Get to know Luncumo<<

"He's a gangster and everyone in the family is a gangster even his 3 months years old sister is a gangster that kid can shoot shame she shoots to aim and kills to aim the kid once robbed fedelity's airplane I forgot to mention she can fly shes a vampire ke.

Luncumo is 17 years old & he'll be turning 31 tommorow, he owns restaurants×10+, hospitals×4+, clubs×16+, law firms×9+ nb: all his businesses are all over the world. He lives in a RDP with longs ass stairs." [I'll continue with get to know Luncumo tommorow.

Title: Luncumo Mphati ndiligintsakazi lakhe.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 41.





Qaphela's POV.



As I walk in the door is wide open even the gate was open when I walked in. I doubt Mbaliyothando is still here but I thought she was sleeping. I run inside most of the things are on the floor looks like there was a robbery or something.

"Mbaliyothando." I call out.

She doesn't answer, I run to their room.

She's not here, damn.

Me: Mbali! I call her again.

I search all the rooms and she's not here.

Zuu walks in.

Him: You won't believe what happened.

He stops talking.

Him: Ugrand bawo?

- Are you fine?

Me: Akekho mfethu.

- She's not here

Him: Ubani?

- Who?

Me: Uhm uMbali. I don't know where she is, when I got here the door was open even the gate.

Him: Wasn't she sleeping?

Me: She was, she was ndoda.

Him: Damn!

We decide on searching the house, something catches my eye.

Me: Uzubenathi! I call out.

Him: Yeah?

Me: Sondela bawo.

He walks up to me. It's a torn top not any top but the one Mbali was wearing, my hands shake a little. Zuu picks up the top.

Him: She was wearing this right?

Me: Yes.

Looks like someone was here.

Him: Do you think someone kidnapped her?

Me: It looks like it we can never be sure
Bafo.

Him: Is her phone here? Her wallet or
something?

I shrug. We get to their room everything is
here, their phones, her wallet.

Me: I don't think she ran away, I think
she's still somewhere here.

Her wallet has money, her bank card is still
here, everything I think someone would need
when they are running away.

Him: Damn maybe she went to see Luncumo.

Me: I don't think so, someone was here. I
don't know who but someone was here.

Him: So what are we going to do?

Me: I don't know but we have to inform
Luncumo and no cops please Uzubenathi.

He nods walking out.

Him: I need to smoke.

Me: Lurra will kill you if he finds you are smoking.

Him: He doesn't have to know. He says lighting his cigarette.

I sit down I turn on the TV Lurra is really rich, where the hell does he get money to pay R400 monthly for iDstv.

Mbali's POV.

I feel someone caressing my cheek slowly. "Wakey wakey." Says the person. It's not Ncumo, I know his voice, I open my eyes slowly.

Me: What the fuck! I say as I see Zwane bhuti Lunga's friend.

Him: I had a nice time last night. Your sex game isn't that bad.

Wtf! He had a nice time? Phi? When he was rapping me? Am shaking, am in tears. How did I end up here? I so hate bhuti Lunga & I

swear if we ever cross ways am going to kill him.

Him: I bought you breakfast honey. He says attempting to kiss me, I slap him.

Him: You can't slap your hands are really soft. I like them.

He says chuckling.

Him: Eat your foods honey, you don't want to starve our baby.

Me: Luncumo's baby. I say crying.

"Zwane!" Somebody calls him.

Him: Ngiyeza Lunga, give a few seconds.

He takes hand cuffs, I move to the door to my surprise it's locked.

Me: Bhuti Lunga! Lunga! I say hitting the door.

Me: Lunga!

Him: He doesn't care about you. He's the reason you are here.

He's not lying Lunga is the reason am here.

That bloody psychopath, these two are

mentally unstable. Lunga is the reason Zwane rapped me.

I scream help nobody answers. This room is so small I can't even move it has my pictures all over it, he's really mentally unstable. I run around the room screaming help, I trip he catches me before I fall he covers my mouth with a towel. I kick and hit him, he ties me to the bed using the handcuffs. I cry and try moving, I hope my baby is fine, am so hungry and thirsty, I kick the tray of food that was on top of the bed. I hope my baby is okay.

Simthandile's POV.

Am packing my bags, am going back to Gauteng but I'll visit my mom first maybe I'll stay there for two weeks or so then go back. I take the car keys and park my bags in the boot it's 3am, am leaving so early cause I don't want them to see me. They've been

begging the other wife to remove the charges against their son, I pray she doesn't Nkosi is a bastard and he deserves to rot in jail. I get in my car and reverse out of the yard.

It's 11:00am and everyone is up. I had to pass at the mall so I can get them food before I get home. My mom is feeding her chickens. Am cancelling my wedding with Nkosi and I swear I'll not go back to him again. I park my car, my mom walks towards my car.

Her: Thandile! she says with so much excitement.

I smile at her.

Me: Mama. I say getting out of my car.

She hugs me.

Her: How are doing? Why didn't you tell me you are coming?

Me: Am fine mama, wena unjani?

Her: Ndiphilile sanalwam, uphi umkhwenyana?

Me: Ummm...a..akekho mama. He is in Joburg.

Her: Uze wedwa?

I nod. We offload the groceries.

Me: Mama can you please call a family meeting. There's something I have to tell you.

Mom organized the family meeting, it's my uncles, aunts, brothers and sisters. Am so nervous, I know they are going to judge and shit but I don't care am not leaving this marriage oops engagement for them am doing it for my self.

Mom: Thandile usibizeleni?

Me: Uhhm mama, so me and Nkosi are no longer getting married am cancelling the wedding.

Malume: Uthini Simthandile?!

He shouts.

A part of me wants to say nditsho but I can't, not with the whole family here.

Me: Uhm we are cancelling the wedding. I fell out of love with Nkosinathi.

Mom: You'll fall in love with him again Simthandile!

My mom shouts.

Aunt: Simthandile stay in your marriage, attend couples therapy. See where things went wrong, you can't leave umende.

"Simthandile nawe wenza lemikhuba ka Noluthando? Nawe ufuna ubuya emendweni?"

Says one of the aunt's.

Another one added "Ulihlazo Simthandile."

Mom: Bazothini abantu Simthandile?

Me: Bazothetha as usual mama. I say looking down.

Makazi Nomafu claps her hands.

Me: Abantu bohlala bethatha that's the only thing they are good at.

Mom: Simthandile mani! Uzosihlebisa ngabantu, uzosenza intlekize ebantwini.

Nomafu: Usozihlekisa ngentshaba.

Me: Unlike Mbaliyothando am not pregnant at 17.

My mom gasps.

Nomafu: Uthi itheni lanto kaNoluthando?

Daluxolo: Don't use Mbali's pregnancy to defend yourself! Umdala mani Simthandile you can do better besides we all make mistakes!

He says clicking his tongue, he glances at me one more time and walks out.

This was my only way out of this.

Me: She's 4 months pregnant. I say in a whisper responding to Nomafu's question.

Mom: Nosijongisa ngabantu Simthandile wena nala Mbaliyothando!

She shouts and walks out.

I don't care as long as am out of the hook.

Insert 42.





Qaphela's POV.



Mna I've given up on finding Mbali, nobody knows where she went everyone last saw her 5 days ago. We haven't told Ta Lurra I think it's about time we told him, it's been two days, two motherfucking days. I failed Lurra, we failed him, I promised him I'll look after her till he comes back. I honestly don't know what to do, who to call. One thing I know is Ta Lurra will kill me.

Me: I think it's about time we told Lurra bawo wam.

Him: I told you 5 days ago uba masimxelele but no you refused. Andizingeni uzomxelela wedwa.

Me: It's no time for I told you so's.

Him: Ngxaki yakho awumameli Mr Sgora!

Me: We need a plan of how we are going to tell him.

Him: Yhewethu we will say it as it is.

Me: We have to be sensitive mani, Lurra is fragile at the moment and am sure he's been trying to reach us with those jail phones.

Him: I just hope Mbali and the baby are still alive.

Me: Yeah bawo.

I say changing the channel to 325.

Am so nervous this will break Ta Lurra. He walks in and sits opposite us.

Me: Bafo.

Him: Ndoda.

Zuu: Ugrand ndoda?

Him: Ndi' sharp bafo but am worried, I've been trying to call bhabha and she's not answering.

Me: Uhm ndoda.....

Zuu: Thetha Qaphela!

Haybo, I thought we were together in this phofu utshilo akazingeni.

Me: Ummm Luncumo mamela bro.....mamela.....

Him: Thetha Q please.

He says calm as ever.

Him: Did something happen to bhabha or my baby? He says so fast, he's already worried.

Me: Uhm yeah, I think she was kidnapped. I say in a whisper.

Him: Huh? He asks shocked.

Me: I think she was kidnapped. We left her for a few hours and when we got back she was not there.

Zuu: Uhm it looks like it was a robbery but the clothes he...I mean she was wearing were torn, um it's been 5 days since she went missing.

Luncumo's POV.

I think I went deaf, I didn't hear that. My bhabha went missing.

Me: Bras are y'all sure?

They nod.

Me: Then why didn't you tell me?

Uzubenathi? Qaphela?

My voice is breaking.

Damn! This is no time to cry.

Me: So you guys decided I didn't deserve to know that my baby and bhabha are missing?

They keep quiet.

Me: Do you know who took her? Do you guys have a lead?

Q: Uhm no but we are working on it Ta Lurra.

Me: Did you tell Godmother?

Zuu: We thought you said you don't want her involved in your mess. I mean even when you were arrested you said we must not call her. I did. The problem with asking for help from Godmother you'll have to do something for

her in this case, I'll have to work for her 5 more years, whoever had me arrested really fucked with me. I guess I'll have to spend another 5 years working for Godmother.

Me: Call Godmother, I really need her help. This is the last time am seeking help from that woman.

Me: Uhmm do you guys have money, any amount?

Q: I do but it's not that much.

Me: Zuu?

Zuu: Yeah, what do you need money for?

Me: I know a cop who works here, she's going to make the docket disappear.

Zuu: Her name?

Me: Ms Ntokozo Ndlovu. Just make sure she makes the docket and the drugs disappear.

Q: On it.

Me: One last thing, make sure she gives the drugs and the docket to you. Nina you'll give me the evidence, I'll destroy it myself.

Zuu: UGodmother ungenaphi kulento?

Me: She'll help us find bhabha. We don't have connections like she does. It's always been the three of us and in this case we need more hands.

Mbali's POV.

I've been tied on this bed, my back hurts actually my whole body hurts. I feel like crying, I haven't had food in a very long time and my cravings are messing with me. I hope my baby is fine, he's been giving me water, damn bloody bastard. He walks in with food am hungry, I really need food I'll eat for the sake of my baby.

Him: Mbali yam. He says sitting on the bed.

Him: I'll untie you so you can eat.

I nod.

He removes the cloth on my mouth, he unties one arm and leaves the other one tied and I

sit on my butt. He helps feed me, how the hell can I fight him on my own. After feeding me he ties me back with me kicking and screaming he puts the cloth in my mouth and walks out.

Me: Fuck you! I say with the cloth in my mouth, I can't even talk properly.

He walks in and unbuckles his belt.

Him: It's about time you feed me. You know am a man and I have needs.

He says parting my legs with knee.

Him: Sexual ones.

Tears roll down my cheeks.

Does he really think what he's doing is normal? What type of a sick person is he? He pulls my pants down along with my underwear, he inserts himself and starts thrusting.

Me: Please, please stop! I doubt he can hear me these bloody cloth is making it really hard for me to talk or scream. He removes it.

Me: Please stop, am begging you.

Him: Beg baby, I like it when you beg. He says thrusting more. Am not ok.

He thrusts till he is satisfied, he pulls my pants up and walks out.

Mini narration.

Zuu & Q make their way into Ms Ndlovu's office, they settle down. They greet her and Q puts his feet on her table, he's even chewing on a matchstick.

Q: Mamphoyisa. He says sipping on her cup of coffee.

Ms Ndlovu looks pissed, she clicks her tongue.

Her: Ufunani?

Q: Whuu I thought you would never ask.

Zuu is sitting watching Q as he talks to this hot lady in front of them. Zuu is the most quiet in the group.

Q: Luncumo Mphati said you can help us with something.

She freezes for a moment.

Her: I don't know who that is? She says focusing on the papers in front of her.

Zuu: You know exactly who we are talking about. He said we must give you this. He says throwing a small bag at her.

Her: What's this?

Q: Money uthi yini? Umkhulu wakho? Lalela la he said you must make his case disappear or else everyone will know your side hustle.

Her: I don't have any side hustles.

Q: Ohh really? Drug smuggling? Making dockets disappear? Illegal cigarettes? Car theft?

She looks at him shocked she didn't think they knew much about her.

Her: I'll get the docket to you before midnight.

Zuu: Our numbers are in that bag you'll call us when you have what we need.

She nods as they walk out.

Insert 43.



Luncumo's POV.



Am laying on this bed facing the roof. It's all my fault they are gone, am the one to blame. Maybe if I wasn't a drug dealer they would still be with me. I failed bhabha and my baby, am such a failure. I pray they are okay wherever they are cause if anything and I mean anything happens to them all hell will break loose.

Me: I failed her, I really did. I say to myself.

I wish there was something I could do to save bhabha and my baby, I really feel weak and powerless right now. I don't know what to do, there's absolutely nothing I can do when am here. I hope they are okay wherever they are or else all hell will break loose. I try sleeping but I can't, I keep on tossing and turning. Am so worried about bhabha she's so fragile and weak.

"Luncumo Mphati!" Says Detective Manzi.
I roll my eyes while getting up from this bed, this is not even a bed my back hurts.

Me: Water bawo wam.

He opens the gates or door whatever these prisons doors are called.

Him: You are free Mphati.

I smile a little.

Now it's time for me to save bhabha and my baby. I hope they are okay wherever they are.

Him: Mphati I don't who you bribed but whoever you bribed you'll go down with him.

Me: Ohk.

Him: Your drug money is working for you huh? You afford to buy corrupt cops so they help you make your docket disappear.

Me: When am I leaving?

Him: Mphati I'll bring you and your crew down.

Me: Fine by me.

I say throwing my hands in the air.

I walk into my house and all I hear is laughs and giggles. I make my way to sitting room, Zuu and Q are watching TV and their are with girls I've never seen. Q is single so he can have whoever he wants but Zuu is taken but he is acting like he is single. I kick the alcohol on the table, they are so fucken drunk. The glasses break they all turn to look at me.

Q: Ohh Lurra bafo. There's alcohol, there are girls everything a man needs. Ke dezembaaaaa!

Am so pissed, so my girls is missing bona they are drinking alcohol, my alcohol, they are eating my food. Wow that's fucken.....

Me: So this is you working on it?! So this is how you guys work on it?! With girls twerking on your dicks?!

Zuu: Ta Lurra rest. Have some meat and a grab a beer and take a chill pill.

I chuckle and walk to my room. I stop on my tracks.

Me: When I get back I don't want to see anyone here or else nizonya.

I sit on my bed and hold on to her teddy bear, she loves this teddy bear more than she loves me. Our room smell like her, everything in this house smells like her.

Me: Damn Luncumo you are such a failure. A fucking failure!

Zuu and Q walk in and sit next to me.

Me: Phumani. I say in a low tone.

- Get out.

Q: Lurra bra-

Me: Qaphela! I shout.

Zuu gets up and walks out.

Me: Wena kutheni ungamlandeli? Mlandele.

- Why aren't you following him? Follow him.

Him: Lurra we will find bhabha for now you need to chill.

I look at him.

Him: Are you crying? Ha.a Lurra this is not you. Ukhaleli imeddy? Icherry bawo?

- You are crying for a girl? A girl bro?

Me: A girl I love Qaphela, a girl whose carrying my baby.

Him: Ikwenza weak lento yakho mfethu.

Whatever akutyise Yona lamntana istrongo.

- Your thing is making you weak.

I slap him.

Me: Phuma! He gets up.

Him: Okay, am out but you know where to find when you need me.

He says walking out.

>>2 days later<<

Mbali's POV.

Zwane walks in, he has a tray I guess he bought me food like he always does.

Him: I want to introduce you to someone very important to me.

He says sitting on the dressing table.

Him: You are going to love her, I mean you already love her. I present to you my younger sister, Amara Zwane.

He says and the door handle goes down.

Someleze walks in, her and her brother really look alike, why didn't I see this, I can be so stupid.

Her: Hey Mbali. She says sitting next to her brother.

Him: She'd make a perfect Zwane makoti right?

Her: She would big bro. You know how to choose. Ukhethe kahle bhuti wami.

- You chose well my brother.

I guess madness runs in the family. So she's Amara Zwane, wow. I wish I stayed away from her like Lurra and Hlehle told me, if I wasn't hot hearded I wouldn't have been here. So I shared everything with her and she shared it with her bipolar brother. Wow such betrayal, yeah neh ngamane ngithembe itye kunokuthi ngithembe umuntu ngoba umuntu uzokijile eswini nje ngotywala.

-

Simthandile's POV.

Mom: Simthandile call Mbali. I've been trying to contact her but she's ignoring me, she's

not answering my messages and calls. Call her mani!

Me: Let me get my phone.

I get my phone and call Mbali she's not answering. She's been offline for full 7 days now, ayifani naye leyo. Am starting to get worried now but I have to make my family forget about me trying to divorce Nkosi.

Arghh divorce we weren't even married but they have to forget about him, I wish there was a potion to make the forget about Nkosi cause they keep on bringing it up.

Me: She's not answering her calls.

Aunt: Simthandile nisijongisa ngentshaba zethu.

Mom: Nisenza intlekisa ebantwini. Intshaba zethu ziyahleka ngoku. Yhuu am sure uyavuya apha akhoyo uMadlamini.

These woman mara.

Richard's POV.

It's been 4 days since I've been released from prison, I was released on good behavior. I've been live with Mam' Mphati, I really want to talk to my daughter but am afraid of her. I will first have to go to Nolu's grave and apologize for everything, for trying not to reach out to my daughter, then I'll have to find my son, the only thing I know is that he was bought by the Mkhize family a very rich family but they couldn't have kids, well the wife was the one who can not have kids. For now am staying in Mama's grandson's backroom since he moved out and bought a house for him and my daughter. I can't really accept that my princess is dating and pregnant but I have to, such things happen but what's worse is that she is cohabitating.

I finally decided to go to my house the one me and Nolu bought. I knock on the door and

my brother opnes. The very same guy who framed me for me murder along with Mr Mbebe. He freezes as he sees me his jaw drops he swallows hard.

Me: Mntaka mama. Gazi lam. Menemene.

"Babe whose at the door." Says a lady.

A few seconds later she appears, ohh it's my wife's sister, I guess they are married.

Her: What do you want here?

Me: Am back for what's mine. I'll get everything that belongs to me.

Insert 44.



Luncumo's POV.



I've been up all night, I can't think of anyone who would want to hurt bhabha, no one comes

to my mind. I'm pacing up and down nothing makes sense, there's no lead. All I have is her torn PJs nothing else, this is fucking frustrating, there's nothing that can help us with anything here. Whoever took her made she/he doesn't make any mistakes but am sure there's a loophole somewhere. I take her phone and turn it on, the wallpaper is a picture of me kissing her babybump, I smile to myself.

Me: I hope they are okay wherever they are. I say getting up from the sofa, sitting here won't help with anything but I have to make myself food first. I make myself eggs and bread, am about to take my first bite, I just push my plate away from me.

Me: Fuck!

I can't eat without knowing whether they are eating or what. Someone pushes my plate back to me. I lift my head up, mxm it's Zuu.

Him: Eat then we will talk. Sizomfumana mani, subanexhala.

- We will find her, don't worry.

Me: Bra I don't know if they are eating or wha-

Him: Even if it's 2 slices Lurra. Need anything to drink?

Me: Yeah, juice.

We eat while talking about who could have kidnapped her, well we have Zwane, Lunga & Ntando at No.1 cause they are still pissed about the whole territory thing, at No.2 we have Mr Mudau he's the only business associate of mine that knew about her & she was not disrespectful when she spoke to him but Mudau thinks she was & he is the type who doesn't want to be disrespected by anyone, especially woman, at No.3 we have Godmother cause she wants me to continue working for her, me knowing that woman she would definitely do it, I mean losing me

means losing a lot of money but I doubt she would and if she was the one who took her she would have told me by now.

Me: Am not sure about Godmother. If she had bhabha, I think by now she would have told me.

Him: So Mr Mudau and those 3 dummies.

Me: Mudau and those 3 dummies.

Him: You know Kuhle once told me how Zwane has been stalking Mbali.

Me: Stalking? She didn't tell me anything about that.

Him: Yeah Kuhle did say she didn't really think it was something serious but he was harassing her.

Mhh, that leaves me with Zwane. That guy and Lunga hate my gut.

Me: Let me call Ndlovu, there's something I need to ask her.

Him: Go ahead.

I spoke to Ndlovu and she confirmed that Zwane and Lunga we the ones who gave the police a tip off. We already spoke to Godmother and she offered me 5 of her guys but Lunga and Zwane are weak I doubt they need so much people. Ohh and bhabha's friend Tinyiko who is also our neighbor said she saw Lunga and Zwane here on the day she went missing but Lunga was the first one to leave & Zwane was the last one to leave with bhabha of course, so we are sure Zwane and Lunga are behind all of this.

Amos: Mphati are you fine?

Me: Huh?

Amos: I know we ain't buddies but are you fine?

Me: Yeah am good nkabiyami.

Godmother has iyinkabi zase hostel, hardcore man, hitmen. Yho, I understand why everyone fears and they no better than to double cross her.

Amos: Asambeni ke.

He says walking out.

Him: Are you sure ugrand? Must I call Q I know he is your best friend and you might want him to be here-

Me: You are here right?

Him: Yeah.

Me: If Q wanted to be here, he would be here but he is not cause he doesn't want to be here and we won't force him. He is a grown man for fuck sake.

Him: Sure.

Mhh I didn't think Zwane was this smart his house has guards they have guns and stuff, doesn't he think people will get suspicious when he has so many guards roaming around with guns.

Zakes: He has only 12 guards and am sure they are as weak as he is.

I guess being the ministers son works for him. He has so many guards and a very nice

house but here's our here fighting for a territory when he could be eating his dad's money, dump.

Doom: Mphati, Solani and Amos your focus is getting to door. The rest of us are working from outside, nina the door is your main focus. Are we clear.

So we actually found out he has 17 guards what's worse is that he is with his family but they'll die together if they die. The fence has electric wires the only plan is using the gate and yes we are killing the guards, so it turns out using a gun is harder than it looks but am cool now but Godmother said more gun lessons for me and Zuu. We sneak up on the two guards who are at the gate and fire shots, they both fall down. Opening the gate and going in slowly soon enough Zwane's guards are firing back.

Amos: Let's keep moving.

Okay this is survival of the fittest, more gunshots are fired one lands on my left leg.

Me: Arghh! I groan.

Me: Am fine Zuu. I say to him as he attempts to come to me.

Zwane comes out he also has a gun, am almost by the door, there are flowers here so am hiding there my leg isn't doing me any justice, I fire a shot at him right on his arm his gun falls as he is kneeling down to pick it up I fire my second shot aiming at his hip.

Him: Dammit!

He lays on his side giving me his back, I shoot him on his back two bullets on his back, one on his arm, one on his hip. If these four bullets won't kill him, I'll do it myself. I get up from the floor he is lying next to the door I kick him on his back and pick up his gun. As am getting inside the house all I hear is his mom screaming.

The gunshots have decreased, Amos walks in.

Amos: I'll deal with the minister and his wife. Wena find your girl.

I nod.

Me: Am going up stairs, wena you search this floor.

I say to Zuu.

As am going up the stairs with the gun in my hand, I hear something moving am not sure what it is. I decide to ignore it, I hear more screams and sobs.

Mbali's POV.

Am crying and screaming. All I hear is gunshots and a lady screaming downstairs. The gunshots fade, this is the perfect time for me to scream.

Me: Help! Somebody help!

The cloth is falling out a little now. Making it easier for me to scream for help. Am trying

to get this hand cuffs of me and I can't, this bed is moving making more noise than I am.

The door handle goes down.

Him: Bhabha!

Oh Lord it's him. He's here!

Me: Luncumo! I say trying so hard not to cry. He kicks the door 4 times and it falls causing me to scream. He rushes to me, his leg is bleeding.

Him: Bhabha. He says breathing heavily. He unties the ropes on my hands and my feet. He hugs me, I can't help but cry.

Him: Shhhh, sorry am so sorry. It's all my fault, everything is my fault.

"Mphati!"

He helps me get up he is limping and we are walking downstairs. I spot Zuu standing at the stairs and another guy whom I've never seen before.

"She's pregnant?" The guys asks Zuu.

Zuu nods.

Amos called a doctor to check up on us. The bullet was removed and they gave him some meds. Our baby is also fine, I mean Zwane was feeding me and he did his own check ups on my baby. The only problem is my back it hurts yoh. Ncumo has his hands in my belly & I have my hand on top of his, I feel him getting out of bed, I hold him.

Me: Don't go, please.

Him: Am going to the bathroom, I won't leave.

Me: You promise?

Him: I promise. Can I go now?

I nod.

He kisses me on my forehead and walks out.

I sit up straight and wait for him to come back.

Insert 45.





Luncumo's POV.



It's morning and we are eating, she's here but her mind is not here.

Me: bhabha.

She doesn't respond. I call her 4 more times, she jumps and turns to face me.

Me: Are you fine?

She slightly nods.

Me: Bhabha are you sure?

Her: Am fine Ncumo, am just worried about my results.

Me: Ohk.

I don't believe her, she's not fine Zwane did something to her, I don't know what he did but am sure he did something.

Me: Do you need someone you can talk to?

Like Kuhle or Vuyolwam or Someleze?

Her: She's Zwane's sister. She says in a low tone.

Me: Whose Zwane's sister?

Her: Someleze, she's Zwane's younger sister.

Me: What!

I knew there was something off with that girl, I just didn't know what it was.

Her: She helped him plan this whole thing, the whole arrest and everything else.

Me: Am sorry, I know you loved and trusted her with your personal things and she fucked you over.

I say hugging her, she hugs me back.

It feels so good to have her in my arms.

Me: Am sorry. I say in a whisper.

Me: Bhabha, am going to see Zuu there's something we need to talk about.

I tell her putting on my shoes, getting ready to leave.

Her: Uhm...can't...can't he come here? I mean you guys can always talk about whatever you want to talk about here.

Me: Bhabha I won't leave you I promise, I'll go there for a hour or two then come back. I say brushing her back, I kiss her cheek and forehead.

Me: Am not going to leave you baby. I can call Tinyiko so she can keep you company while am gone but I promise to come back.

Her: Uhm there's no need to call her, you can go, am fine, I'll be fine on my own.

She says teary.

Me: Bhabha-

Her: You can go Luncumo. I'll be fine.

Me: Are you sure?

Her: Am sure, you can go babe.

Kuhle's POV.

Me: Uzubenathi where are you fucking going?!

Him: I told you am going out with Luncumo.

Me: The very same Luncumo who had you shot?! That one?!

He looks at me and rolls his eyes.

Him: Kusekuseni joe.

- It's morning.

Me: What does that have to do with me?

Him: You are making noise, people are still sleeping.

Me: I don't care about people. What I care about is that you came back with a bleeding arm and you didn't give me any explanation.

Him: I don't owe you any explanation Kuhle, we are not married.

Me: You came here, knocking in the middle of the night begging me to open the door for you because you were shot and you can't go home.

Him: Yakho-

Me: You owe me an explanation, I need to know why and how you got shot?!

Him: I was saving your fucken sister okay! She was kidnapped me and Lurra....

He stops talking.

Him: Am leaving. He says heading to the door.

Me: Mbali was kidnapped?

Him: You heard me, open this door nja!

I throw the keys at him and pick up my phone to call Mbali and it takes me straight to voicemail. I call Kwanda to see whether he had from Mbali, he tells me he last spoke to her last night and she said she was fine, she had lost her phone but she found it.

Lunga's POV.

We are eating as the whole family, even though Lonke can't keep it to himself that he doesn't want me here.

Him: When are you leaving? He says sipping on his juice.

Mom: Lulonke!

Him: I was just asking mama, am curious.

Dad: Lonke can't you at least pretend like you enjoy having your brother here.

Pretending for a few hours won't hurt.

Lonke gets up.

Him: I need to check-up on my siblings to see how they are doing. I haven't spoken to them in 5 days.

Mom: Please ask Mbali how is her baby doing and does she know the baby's gender yet.

Him: I will ask her mama, am going to be an uncle in a few months. Malume Lonke, awuu madoda.

He says going to his room. My phone rings, it's an unknown number.

Me: Hello.

"Hey am I talking to Lunga? Geze's friend?"

Me: Yes, this is him.

"Well this is Melissa, I called to inform you that Gezeyihlekise was shot a few days ago."

Me: Isn't he spending some quality time with his girlfriend?

I ask shocked.

"Am his girlfriend and no he was not with me but he was shot."

Me: Where is he? I say getting my car keys. I kiss mom's cheek.

Me: Am leaving, I'll see you tommorow. Tell Lonke I left.

Mom and dad nod, I run to my to my car.

Luncumo's POV.

I just got back from my meeting with Godmother and his guys. Am so tired, I make my way to my room. Bhabha is not here, I call her she doesn't respond I get up from my bed. As am passing the bathroom, I hear mini screams and sobs, I try opening the

bathroom door and it's locked. I get the spare key and open the door, bhabha has a blade in her hands, there's blood on the blade. I freeze at the sight in front of me, I rush to her and hold her from behind, she drops the blade shaking.

Her: When...when did you get here? She asks with her voice shaking.

Me: It doesn't matter. I say grabbing a towel to cover her up, she just took a bath she's wet. I pick her up and take her to our room.

Me: Bhabha why would you want to kill yourself?

Her: I wasn't.....I was trying to-
She's now crying and her breathing has changed.

Me: Am sorry, I'll get you water.
I say getting up to get her water.

Bhabha is now sleeping, she is holding onto her teddy bear. Am standing at the door watching her sleep, she's so pretty. I wonder what's eating her, am pretty sure something happened to her and she doesn't want to talk about it. She'll have to tell me sooner or later, I'll wait for now but I need to know what happened to her.

Her: Mhh...mhh! She says moving her head. I walk towards the bed and stand above her.

Her: Please stop, please! She says as tears roll down her cheeks.

Her: Don't do this! Please Zwane! She says screaming.

I shake her, she tries fighting me off.

Me: Mbaliyothando! I say holding her more.

Her: Please! Am begging you!

Me: Mbaliyothando! Bhabha!

She opens her eyes, she's breathing heavily.

Her: Luncu..... Luncumo.

Me: Am here. Am sorry baby, my love. I say making her rest her head on my chest.

Her: He was here, in our room.

Me: Who?

She wipes her tears.

Her: Him, Zwane.

Me: He is not here, he is in hospital fighting for his life.

Her: No, no, he was here Ncumo. He tried to.....

She says running out of breath.

Me: He is not here babe, I promise.

I say kissing her forehead.

Me: Am sorry. I say in a whisper.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 46.



Mbali's POV.





Him: Bhabha we need to talk. He says wrapping his hands around my waist.

Me: About what babe?

Him: What happened at Zwane's house. I know something happened.

Me: Nothing happened I thought I made it clear.

Him: As much as I would love to believe what you are saying, I don't.

Me: Am fine really. Nothing happened, am sure.

Him: Bhabha you can't even sleep properly, you are having nightmares. You cry and scream in your sleep.

I swallow really hard. He brushes my belly.

Him: Stress is not good for you, think about our baby.

Me: I know, am sorry.

Him: Bhabha I don't know what happened at Zwane's house but I know something happened and you are going to tell me. Sooner or later you'll have to tell me.

Me: Luncumo Mphati nothing happened, okay! I don't know what you think happened back there, didn't happen!

Him: Bhabha-

Me: It's all in your head, nothing happened!

Him: Hey, hey, come down babe. I was just asking am just worried about you themba lam.

Me: Ta Lurra am fine. Am doing okay, I promise.

Him: Do you need a therapist babe? You can't be stressed not now, the stress is not good for our baby.

Me: No am fine really.

He kisses my shoulder.

Him: Babe talk to me, am your man honey. You can trust me with anything. Come on talk to me mntuwam.

Me: I know and I trust you.

Him: Then talk to me bhabha, why are you shutting me out?

Me: There's nothing to talk about.

He caresses my belly once and let's go of me.

Him: Am going to check up on Q, I haven't seen him in a while.

He plants a kiss on my forehead and makes his way to the door.

Me: He raped me.

I tell him as he is about to walk out of the door. He freezes.

Him: What?! He asks already angry.

Me: Zwane raped me. I say with tears rolling down my cheeks.

He comes up to me, he hugs me.

Him: Am sorry bhabha, I didn't know. It's all my fault, am so sorry, shh.

Me: It's not your fault. I should have reported him to the cops the moment he

started stalking me but I didn't think it was serious.

Him: The nightmares were all caused by this.....

He stops talking and takes a deep breath.

Him: The rape.

He is angry but trying to remain calm. His veins are popping out, his hands are shaking, his eyes are red.

Him: Did you tell anyone?

Me: No, I didn't.

Him: You need a therapist themba lam.

He keeps on telling me how sorry he is and how everything is his fault. I honestly don't blame him, he had nothing to do with this, it's all bhuti Lunga and Zwane's fault.

I break the hug.

Me: Am fine really.

Him: I love you bhabha. He says wiping my tears.

Me: I love you too.

He holds both of my hands and kisses them.

Him: Am sorry, I promised to protect you and I failed. Damn am sure a failure.

Me: You are not.

His phone rings, he kisses both of my hands and let's go of them. I need something to eat.

Him: Zuu bhuda, I know am late but I won't make it..... Uzubenathi I said am not coming....

Which part of am not coming do you not understand..... Do I look like I give a fuck about any of the things you said..... Just tell them am not coming, tommorow is still a day..... Fuck off then.

He says and drops the call.

Me: Want some?

He looks at what am eating.

Him: No, thank you am full.

I laugh.

Luncumo hates avocado, he doesn't like the smell.

>>6 days later<<

Kuhle's POV.

Am on my way to see Mbali, am not even sure about where her and Ta Lurra stay so I asked Zuu to accompany me since he's been there before. He also wants to see Ta Lurra since he cancelled up on him, he needs to know what's going. We knock & Ta Lurra opens rolling his red eyes, he rubs them.

Him: What do you want here?

Me: Am here to see Mbali, I heard she was kidnapped.

Him: Ohh come in. Bhabha your sister is here to see you!

Me & Zuu have been dating for 11+ months and I don't even have a pet name. Am just Yakhokuhle to him and everyone else. On the other side Mbali & Ta Lurra have been dating for 8 - 10 months, on the 4th month Mbali

fell pregnant, the 5th or 6th month she moved in with Ta Lurra. What's next?
Amalobolo.

Her: Am coming!

Him: Q you know where the sofa's are located right?

Zuu laughs and nods.

Him: Yeah I need to check bhabha's pots. He says going to the kitchen.

She even gets help while cooking. Zuu let's me cook on my own, I can't even cook proper food, am used to Mbaliyothando cooking for us. Yeah neh life gets harder as you grow older. We settle down Zuu changes the cartoons to soccer. Mbali walks in and she is wearing a Nike tracksuit and a black baggy shirt with Tupac's face on it. She never owned any Nike clothes njena, I guess the pants belong to Ta Lurra.

Her: Hey sis. I get up and hug her.

Me: How are you doing?

She doesn't look like someone who was kidnapped. Maybe Zuu made that up.

Her: Am good sweetie, what about you.

She says going to the kitchen, I follow behind her.

Him: I'll go talk to Zuu, there's something we need to talk about. I added the onions and everything else then a little bit of water on your rice, it was tasteless.

Ta Lurra pours juice and passes one glass to me and takes one for Zuu. He spansks her and passes going to join Zuu.

Her: Ncumo! Mbali says blushing.

I clear my throat. I honestly came here so I can vent, Zuu cheated on me again, he has 2 other girlfriends besides me and he thinks I don't know.

Me: You look happy, you are glowing and blushing. I guess Ta Lurra is treating you like a queen.

Her: Yeah, he is treating me like a Queen that I am.

Me: You know I found out Zuu was cheating on me with two other girls and he thinks I don't know.

Her: Why don't you just leave him Kuhle? I mean the guy has cheated on you more than twice.

Me: It's not as easy as you make it sound. I love the guy I really do.

Her: I guess you love yourself some HIV, STI'S and all the other sicknesses. Have you tested?

Ohh shit!

Me: Uhm no but am sure am not positive.

Her: You haven't tested mntase. When are you planning on testing?

Me: It's not like you know your status.

Her: I do, tested a few days ago and am negative.

I guess Zuu and Lurra are both cheating.

Me: So wena why don't you leave Lurra? You tested because he was cheating, right?

Her: No and people test for many reasons, I also had my own personal reasons.

Me: Mhh ohk. So now we rock Nike pants but we are saving up for "varsity".

Her: Yeah, we rock brands.

Me: Or baby daddy's drug money works neh? I mean the house, the club he bought, the clothes. Is he going to cover varsity also? I heard all these things from Zuu.

Me: What's next? A car?

She rolls her eyes.

Her: I don't know, it seems like you know better than I do. Am sure you know what's next.

She says drinking water from her water bottle. The nerve she has!

Her: Results are coming in less than a week, I think you should be worrying about that. Life

was better when she was still working for my family.

Insert 47.



Mbali's POV.



So today am taking Sandile to meet with Mr Mandoyi and his wife, am so nervous I haven't seen them in a very long time, I doubt they know that am pregnant. Am shaking a little.

Him: You don't have to go if you don't want to, you know.

Sandile says to me as am locking up.

Me: I know and am going because I want to.

Let me call Ncumo and tell him I'll be a little bit late.

I call him and he is kind of worried about me going to my parents house. He thinks they might do something to me. We drive to my parents house talking here and there.

Him: Would you mind if we do a dna test, I think you are my sister but am not sure.

I choke on my saliva.

Me: I doubt we are related, I mean you are Zulu-

Him: I think I was adopted from your parents, that's why I want to talk to your parents, I want to know what happened.

He says looking at me with pleading eyes.

Me: You can't jump into such conclusions, did you ask your parents?

Him: I did but they denied everything, I look nothing like them but I do look a little bit like you and your mom.

Me: We aren't sure.

Him: That's why I want us to do a dna test so we can be sure. Please think about it.

Me: Ummm we can do the DNA test, I don't mind.

Him: You sound unsure, you don't have to if you don't want to.

Me: I want to. I don't mind really.

Him: Can we go to the doctor tomorrow?

Me: Yes.

Him: Thank you.

He knocks, Nosi opens the door.

Him: She's your sister? He whispers to me.

Me: Cousin. Her mom is my mom's sister after my mom died her mom and my dad got married immediately.

I tell him, he seems shocked.

Him: Are your parents here? Immediately?

He whispers the last part.

Me: Yeah and I turned into their slave. I had to do everything for them.

Her: Dad Mbali is here to see you.

There are boxes everywhere, it looks like they are packing up. Am glad they decided to leave my mom's house alone.

She leads us to the lounge, there's another man sitting in the couch drinking juice. He's telling what to take and what not to take cause some of the things here belong to my mom. Actually everything in this house belongs to my mom.

Old man: Mbaliyothando and Zanokhanyo.

Him: It's Sandile-

Old man: Mkhize, I know.

Him: Uhm sir we need your help with something.

Old man: Am Richard Mandoyi, how can I help you?

Something catches my eye, it's wedding pictures, I take the album he had next to him.

Old man: That was on our wedding day, she was so pretty. She looked like you two.

I sit next to Richard and Sandile settles next to me, am in the middle. I page the album and come across pictures of my mom pregnant, while Bra Rich is holding a baby. Old man: Your mom was pregnant with you and Zano was 4 years old then.

I kind of believe that am Bra Rich's daughter. Sandile takes out a couple of pictures he had on his suit, it's pictures of him when he was a baby.

Me: What happened? I mean how did uhm Sandile-

Them: Zano.

They both correct me.

Me: How did he end up being a Mkhize? What happened? Was he kidnapped or something? Nosi shows up with her parents. I roll my eyes.

Bra Rich: Are you done packing up? I need you out of my house tommorow first thing in the morning.

Noks: We are almost done.

Me: They don't own any furniture here, mom bought everything that's in this house. It's just them and their clothes.

Noks: Where are we suppose to go?

Bra rich: I honestly don't care, you can go to any place of your choice. It's a free country after all.

He says shrugging.

You can tell he doesn't really give a fuck about them.

Vuyolwam's POV.

We've been planning a baby shower for Mbali. We know it's teenage pregnancy but she made an honest mistake plus she's been through a lot she needs to have a little fun and feel loved once in a while. It's me, Kwanda, Kuhle, Owam, Lonke, Chuma & Luvo but Kuhle seems like she doesn't want to be

part of this, she has been moody and she keeps on bad-mouthing Mbali.

Owam: You don't have to be here sisi, you can leave.

Chuma: Owam mani!

Owam: What?! You can tell she doesn't want to be here, she never liked Mbali in the first place, she's free to leave.

Me: Hayi Owam! I do agree with Owam she must feel free to leave.

Owam: Hayi Owam ntoni? Asishoti ngaye. Vaya baby girl.

Kuhle: Thank you. She says getting up.

Kuhle: I didn't want to be here in the first place. She says walking out.

Owam: Besihle singakufuni apha! He shouts. The other brothers look at him.

Him: Yintoni? It's not like we wanted her here and am not a good pretender.

Kwanda is late, he walks in as am thinking about him.

Kay: And then what's going on with her?
Wa'moody so early in the morning, I mean
the sun is out to play birds are singing.
What's with her? It's a lovely day.

Me: You are happy.

Kay: Siyajola kalo thina! Andiyifuni tuu
i'happiness engasuki endodeni, ayo happiness
leyo. Yi'copy.

We laugh.

Luncumo's POV.

We are at a shooting range with Godmother
and her goons.

Her: Mphati!

She calls me. Ohh it's my turn to shoot, I
close my eyes and open them. I look at the
dummy in front of me, I imagine it as Zwane
and I fire shoots out of anger, the gun runs
out of bullets, I wish I could blow his brains
for real not some random dummy. I put the

gun on the table, Godmother pats my shoulder.

Her: That was good Mphati, you did well.
My phone rings, it's Ntando.

Me: Hey, listen if you need more merch, I'll get it to you in 2 days am busy right now, I have a lot going on.

Him: Am not short on merch but you can come and fetch the money, I have half of the merch left.

Me: How can I help you?

Him: Ummm I called to let you know Zwane passed on this morning.

Wait, why is he telling me.

Me: Why are you telling me?

Him: I thought I should cheer you up, some good news for you.

Me: Sure, have the money delivered to my house tomorrow or you can bring it yourself. It's up to you really.

Him: Sho ntwana. He drops the call.

I wanted to drop the call a long time ago but I didn't cause bhabha made it crystal clear that you don't drop the call if you didn't not call.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 48.



Kuhle's POV.



Him: Am going to take a bath, I had a long day, am so tired.

He says leaving the room, he closes the door behind him.

I take his phone and scroll through it, checking his WhatsApp. He blocked me from seeing his status, he posted a picture of him and another girl on his status , it looks like

they were on a picnic. He captioned it "my wife" with a lot of emojis. He posted the pic a few minutes ago, so this was his long day? Am so pissed. A message comes through " I had a nice time today babe, wish we can do it again" another one comes in "The sex was amazing daddy."

Me: Nyaddy, nyaddy my left foot! I shout to the top of my lungs.

Am getting angry. I throw the phone on the wall, I take the flower vase and throw it on the wall it breaks it to many pieces. The opens, Zuu walks in.

Him: Kuhle, Kuhle! Yakhokuhle!

He says holding me from behind.

Him: What's wrong? Utheni?

Me: You are fucking cheating on me! "My wife" who is she! Who the motherfucking fuck is she! Uzubenathi Solani you are cheating on me! Mbali was right, I must break up with you!

Him: So wena uzova ngoMbali? Babe I love you! You can't let your sister get between us.

Me: No Zuu! Am done with you! Am fucking done with you! Am leaving!

Him: Kuhle sleep! We will talk tomorrow morning! I'll clean the mess you made. Wena sleep.

He says calmly.

I pack my things and wear my shoes, he gets in as am taking my bag so I can leave.

Him: Kuhle I said sleep! Sleep Yakhokuhle Mandoyi!

He shouts.

He takes out his boxers and a t-shirt. He throws them at me.

Him: Wear that and sleep.

He says undressing. He locks the door, switches of the lights and gets in bed. He lights the torch with his phone.

Him: Are you joining me or are you joining me?

I sigh and change the get to bed. He holds me so tight and kisses my neck.

Him: I love you.

Mbali's POV.

Sandile drives off and I get in the house Ta Lurra passed out on the couch. I go to our room and change into my pajamas and socks. While am making myself food, I get a call from Malume Dalu.

Me: Malume! I say with a little excitement in me.

Him: Hey Mballz, I thought I should warn you and your baby daddy-

Me: Baby daddy? Wait, how do you know?! I didn't tell you anything.

Him: Simthandile and her husband are breaking up, well your grandma and her aunt's were shouting at her-

Me: She spilled the beans so she can get out of trouble?

Him: Yes and they are on their way to talk to Luyolo, your dad-

Me: He's not my dad, his brother is.

Him: Richard! Wait how did you-

Me: So you knew! I feel so betrayed!

Him: I didn't Mbali, I just knew he had a brother. He framed his brother for murder and took over his businesses, I swear.

I believe him.

Me: Ummm ohk. Thank you for the heads up, Malume.

Him: Sure tshana.

I sigh.

Am full, I don't want to eat. I take a fleece blanket and sleep next to Ncumo on the couch. I plant a kiss on his forehead.

Him: You are back? He says in sleepy voice.

Me: Yes. You can go back to sleep.

Him: Give me a kiss.

He says pouting his lips with his eyes still closed. I kiss him.

Him: Goodnight, I love you and my baby.

Me: I.... We love you too.

He nods and puts his hand in my breast, I moan little while he is squeezing my breast.

Him: Mmh, not today. Am sleepy, very sleepy.

Me: I know, I can tell.

It's obvious. He keeps on falling asleep and waking up.

Him: Did you eat?

Me: Yes, I did. I say in a whisper.

He keeps quite for a little while. I turn to him.

Him: Am not sleeping.

I laugh a little.

Him: You are whispering, why?

Me: Am tired, I just discovered some shocking things we will talk tomorrow.

Him: Mhh ohk.

He knows whispering is my thing when am lying, I doubt he bought "my am tired story".

We are woken up by a loud bang on the door, Ncumo groans.

Him: So early in the morning, abantu abana'peace yazi. Tsek!

He shouts.

"Luncumo, open this door!" The person screams.

Me: My back hurts. I say yawning.

Him: Am sorry, am sure the couch was uncomfortable. Let me attend the door, I'll rub your back, okay.

He says kissing me, I respond, his hands travel to my thighs he brushes them up and down he then puts his hand in my panty, rubbing my clit, he inserts his fingers moving them in and out, I moan. The person knocks harder, he swears in frustration.

Him: Ndiyeza man! Kusekuseni for lekaka man!

He picks up my panty from the floor.

Him: Are you good?

Me: Am wet.

Him: I know and I want to help you but the knock on the door.

Me: Let the person knock till they get tired.

He looks at me then the door, as he is making his way to me. Another loud knock follows.

"Luncumo Soyamengaye Mphati, vula!"

He sighs.

Him: I have to.

Me: I know, umm let me wear that. I say taking my underwear from him and wearing it, he passes me my fleece and I cover myself. I hate unannounced visitors mna.

Ncumo got me a glass of water before he went open the door, his grandmother walks in followed by a slay gogo. I think it's his mom.

He sighs brushing the tip of his nose.

Him: So early in the morning, kufe bani?

He asks resting his head on my shoulder.

Her: Luncumo drugs! Iziyobisi! Uthengisa iziyobisi that's why have all these things you own.

Luncumo clicks his tongue but he made sure his mom didn't hear him.

Him: Yho mama usivusa kabuhlungu kanje for rumors. So early in the morning mama, couldn't it wait?! Lona yena uyaphi?!

He says pointing at his mom. I get up and make my way to our room.

Luncumo's POV.

Sindi: Luncumo you were involved in Zwane's death! You killed him! How can you kill someone and not feel a thing?!

I chuckle.

Me: Ohh he passed on.

Mama: Lurra what's going on my baby? When and how did you turn into an animal.

Me: Am not an animal mama and I didn't kill Zwane, I don't sell drugs. If I was selling drugs you would have known by now mama. She sighs.

Mama: Luncumo, I thought you were getting better but you are getting worse. How do you go from beating people to killing them.

Me: People being Zwane, right? I didn't kill him but I'd kill anyone who would try to cause harm to bhabha or my baby. I'd kill for those two, like I promised bhabha that I'd protect her after I forced her to keep the baby.

Mama: You need to get cleansed Luncumo. Am sure you'll get better.

Sindi: Luncumo just needs a strong pastor from Zambia or Malawi to pray hard for him. I burst out laughing.

Me: I need a sangoma, you see that lady who left right after you arrived needs me to take of her, she was sleeping on the couch the whole night. She woke up complaining about being horny she also needs to be serviced. Today her results are coming out, she's stressed out, nawe Sindi wenza enye iworry.

Mama gasps.

Me: Am sorry. It was-

Mama: Hayibo Luncumo, you didn't have to give out so much info.

There's another knock on the door. Bhabha walks in wearing my shirt and a has sweat pants, she wears my clothes a lot these days. I can hear bhabha shouting to the top of her lungs. I rush to the door only to find Kuhle and her parents at my door step, am slowly getting pissed.

Me: Nifuna ntoni?!

I shout, bhabha folds her arms rolling her eyes.

Mr Mandoyi: Nana we need a place to stay, just for a day. Please, am your dad.

Her: You are not my dad, you are not my fucking dad! You framed MY DAD, BRA RICH for murder and forced my mom to marry you. I couldn't spend time with my old man because of you evil bas-

She takes a deep breath as she is crying.

Her: I hate you! I hate all of you! You killed my mom! You killed my dad's best friend and framed MY DAD for his best friend's murder! You abused me emotionally and physically! You robbed me a chance to feel what a real father's love is and-

Me: Shhhh, sorry. I say hugging her.

Her: You beat me while I was pregnant, I want you dead!

Bhabha shouts.

Her: Am pregnant, leave! I can't afford any stress. She tells them calmly.

Noks: Mbali stop being selfish. Just let us stay for a little while, until we figure out a plan.

Her: No, no, Nokuthula! I don't want you here! You've hurt me enough! I need to focus on myself and my family.

Noks: But we let you stay at our house! That we worked for so hard-

Her: That my mom and Bra Rich worked so hard for, bloody swine!

I stand there shocked.

Her: I'll give you food for the road! I don't know where you guys are going to but I'll give you food. Buy tickets go to Eastern Cape, get fresh air, find yourselves. I don't know honestly.

She says shrugging.

Her: I want you guys out of my life. Y'all can go jump in the nearest cliff, I don't really care. Nibadala, you'll figure yourselves out really.

She says resting her head on my chest as she wraps her hands around my waist.

I kiss her forehead.

Me: Ndiyakuthanda sthandwa sam.

I tell her as am brushing her arm up and down.

Insert 49.



Mbali's POV.



>>>A few months later<<<

I get up from the couch to put my plate away but I don't even make it to the kitchen. A sharp pain hits me.

Me: Arrhhh..... I scream.

I look around looking for my phone, I can't see it. Another sharp pain hits me. Am trying

to breath and I can't find my phone. I scream. I see it on the counter, I reach for it and dial Ncumo's number, am sure he's having a nice time where ever the hell he is, I dial Zano he picks up.

Me: Zano, I think my water broke. I say screaming.

Him: Your water what? He asks sounding confused.

Me: I think am giving birth bastard!

Him: What?! Am on my way, where's Luncumo?

Me: Udla ubusha bakhe..... Arrhhh.

Him: Damn am coming, Vuyolwam wake up, Mbali is giving birth.

He drops the call, I hold the sink for balance.

Zano gets in followed by Vuyolwam. He walks me to his car, am screaming it hurts.

Vuyo: Luncumo said he'll meet us at the hospital. She says getting in the back sit with me.

Her: Breath Mbali.

She says brushing my tummy.

Him: Are you fine small?

Me: Am not! It fucken hurts, am going to kill Luncumo Mphati serious!

I shout. The pain, kanti why don't nobody warn us about labour pains and pregnancy? Zano is speeding, Vuyo is trying to calm me down as am screaming and trying to breath. He parks and rushes me out of the car, the nurse runs to us with a bed, Zano sighs as he follows behind.

Him: Let me see how far Lurra is. He says leaving me with Vuyo and the nurses. They get me to the labour room.

The nurse: Mam we need you to push.

Her: Mbali push. She says squeezing my hands, am sweating and crying.

Lurra walks in, he looks like he was in a fight a hot one.

He freezes and slowly smiles waving his hands, I don't know I think he's shocked.

Nurse: Sir can you please give-

Her: He is the father mam.

Am screaming and pushing, kanti isn't this fucken baby coming.

Me: I'll kill you wena phuma! I say shouting at him.

He is getting dizzy second by second. I don't even think he heard what I said, it's like he is in his own world.

Lurra: Am going to pass out. He says in a low tone.

Lurra: I'll pass out I need water.

He balances with the wall, he is sweating and shaking. Thixo wam osemazulwini.

Yoh!

One of the nurse walk him out. Ndimthembe kangaka. Vuyo squeezes my hand.

"One last time, mam." Someone shouts. I don't really like abelungu but aba I like them shame.

After all that screaming and swearing, I hear baby cries. Lurra walks in with his granny, she's shouting at him.

"It's a boy!"

Makhulu walks over to me, she has bags and shit. The lady hands me Luncumo's baby. Am so tired, I want to sleep.

I feel someone slightly shaking me. I open my eyes and Ncumo is standing by the nurse nervously and the nurse is holding the baby boy. I doubt he touched the baby lona, the way he was shaking.

Her: It's time to feed him mam.

I shake my head no.

Her: He needs to eat.

Me: Can't we get him a bottle or something?

Her: No, you need to breastfeed him.

She slowly brings the baby to me, helping me breastfeed him.

Me: Ngubani igama lakhe?

I ask Ta Lurra, who is busy brushing my hair.

Him: Igama lakhe? Hayi andiyazi bhabha. I don't know, really.

He says shrugging.

Me: Give him a name fondini.

Him: Jongimpi? Felempini? Phikolomzi?

Zwelibanzi? Zwelinzima? Zwelothando?

Gcinikhaya? Yoh ha.a andiyazi.

He shrugs again.

I burst out laughing.

Me: He's such a cutie, bunny will do. Yeah his name is bunny.

He laughs, shaking his head.

Him: Yeah neh, having a baby with a 18 years old kunzima. Thiya i' blessing yakho mfethu mna andizingeni.

His granny, Vuyo, my dad and my brother walk in laughing.

Me: I'll give him the first name wena you'll think of the second one ke.

He nods.

Me: You know Owentsikelelo is a nice name.

Dad: It's a nice name nana.

Him: Mhh Owentsikelelo Mphati not bad bhabha, not bad.

Luncumo's POV.

Bhabha and Owe are back home and my gramms has been helping us with the baby. Today she couldn't come, what a long day this is going to be.

Her: Luncumo! Bhabha calls me.

I've been working on a school assignment and I doubt I'll finish it anytime soon. I put all my books away. I walk into our room, she's holding baby Owe and she waves his bottle at me.

Her: Can you hold him, I want to make his bottle.

Me: He seems fragile bhabha.

I say getting closer.

Her: When are you planning on holding your baby Luncumo?

Since the day he was born I haven't held him. Am still traumatised by what I saw at the hospital and bhabha was ready to murder me.

Me: Breastfeed him Bhabha.

Her: Andizukwenza lokaka mna. She shouts a little.

Me: Pump out some milk for him.

Her: Thatha umntanakho Luncumo
Soyamengaye Mphati!

I get closer a little, yoh ha.a. This baby is fragile.

Her: Luncumo am not going to breastfeed, I'll pump milk for him.

Since he bit bhabha's breast at the hospital, she was like no more, "phinde ungibone ndincancisa mna."

Her: Luncumo just take your fucken baby!
She screams, Owe cries.

I take the baby slowly from her and sit on the bed with him. Trying to shush him, she walks out leaving me with a crying baby.

Insert 50.



Simthandile's POV.



You know South African law is a flop, a fucking flop! Nkosi got released from prison, my mom forced me to get into this shame of a marriage and I had to accept ba am the fourth wife, uSimthandile wonke the fourth wife. I hate my family so much, they did this with Mbali's mom no she's dead, no they are doing it to me. Am scrolling through my

phone, I decided on checking WhatsApp status. OMG Mbali gave birth, it's not a full picture but it's the baby's feet, very cute. "It's a girl?" I type biting my nails, we haven't fixed things so am afraid of what she's going to say, I decide to send the text. She responds, " it's a baby boy, Owentsikelelo." Did she just move on from what I did like it's nothing.

"When am back in Joburg, I'll come see him." I send another text, "Am sorry, very sorry for what I did, I'll apologize kakuhle when am back." She turns of her data.

Well am in Capetown am doing an exposé on a politician, Cape Town is a nice place but I still want to see the beach, I mean we have no beach in Gauteng so I have to see it before I leave. Well today I decided to let my hair loose go to the club, meet some people am sick and tired of staring at Nkosinathi and his wives, he decided to move them to

Joburg shame and he forced us to live in one house. I take a cab to a club recommended by a fellow journalist, she said it's nice so I had to see for myself. I get in and damn are the men here not, ngumlilo. I order shots and ciders I gulp them down, and the bartender keeps them coming, am distressing bethuna. "Simthandile." Says a very deep voice.

I lift my head up, mhh this man in front of me is very sexy. Focus Simmy, focus.

Me: Yes, how can I help you?

I say gulping more shots down. He sits next to me and offers his hand for a hand shake.

Him: Bongani Zulu. He says putting his feet on the table and he mistakenly kicks my shots.

Mmh am so drunk.

Me: You are so handsome, your muscles are pretty, your voice is sexy. I say running my hands on his beard.

I burp, he looks at me smiling.

Me: Mmh, your beard is soft, do you comb it?

Him: Nkabiyami get this lady two bottles of water.

Bartender: Yes, Mr Zulu. He says walking away.

Me: I need to use the bathroom. I say getting up and I fall.

I laugh.

Me: Sorry, am so drunk.

Him: No, it's okay. Let me help you to the bathroom.

He says getting my things.

We make our way to the bathroom, he helps me take off my pants and walks out leaving me alone.

Me: I wouldn't mind riding the hell out of Ndabezitha. I say to myself, giggling.

I get up and try to wear my underwear, I call him. He opens the door, he closes.

Me: You can get in, please help me getting dressed. I tell him biting my lower lip. He

walks in and helps me get dressed. We walk out, I don't know where the hell we are going.

Me: Where are we going Ndabezitha?

He smiles a little.

Him: Am taking you home. Give me your address.

Me: Can't I come home with you.

Him: No problem. He opens the door for me. His car smells really nice.

Luncumo's POV.

Am writing my assignment Bhabha and Owe are sleeping, night is the only time I have to do my school work with out being disturbed. Well my club is up and running, bhabha helped with a few business ideas, it's not that bad. Am disturbed by cries coming from our room, am so sleepy and tired but hey I have to work hard for my son and wife, yeah we ain't

married but she is my fucking wife. I get up yawning and bhabha is fast asleep, I don't blame her really she must be tired from doing everything alone, I need to help my woman whenever I can. I pick Owe up and make my way to the kitchen, thank goodness there's some milk here, I give him his bottle and shush him. I hold him against my chest as he is sucking on his bottle. Am so tired, I'll fall asleep any time. My training with Godmother went well, rumor has it Zwane's funeral also went, I don't like the way he died I want to torture him for all the pain he caused my wife but hey he is dead so it's better than having him alive. Well my wife has also been seeing a therapist and she's getting better, you know some days are better than others. The baby shower also went well, her friends aren't that bad yazi even though I saw them for a short time but they are nice, then there's her brother

Owam a straight talker that little boy is. Zuu & Hlehle are always fighting for what reasons I don't know and I don't even want to know but somewhere bhabha's name showed up, from what Zuu told me bhabha told Hlehle to leave his cheating ass. Then he came to me telling me my wife should stay in her little stupid lane awoye isisu esi smxakileyo, I really wanted to kill him right there and then, but bhabha stopped but ke I am unstoppable I dealt with him in private, he won't come to my house and say whatever shit he wants to say to my wife, anganya emile. Q? He's not okay and he doesn't want to talk to anyone, no pressure but as his friend, I would love to know what's going on but he'll talk when he is ready.

Simthandile's POV.

We drive into his house. We get out of the car, as we get in the house he stops walking and talks.

Him: Are you hungry.

I nod no, with my head rested on his shoulder.

Him: So are you going to bed now or are you want to watch TV?

Me: I'll go to bed. Your house is very nice, you love art huh?

I say looking at the paintings on the wall.

Him: Thank you but this is my brothers house and I don't like art.

Me: Where's your house?

Him: My house is in Joburg, am only here for business purposes.

Me: Ohh I see, well am a journalist, I live Joburg but am doing an exposé on a big shot politician.

We conversate while walking upstairs. He lives me in the room going to get me

something to sleep in. I take off my clothes while I wait for him, he walks in and freezes.

Him: Uhhm..uhmm hey I bought your clothes.

Me: Dude get in, you saw me half naked twice.

I mean he did see me half naked twice so what's the issue. He gets in and hands me his clothes.

Him: You are pretty, you don't deserve what you are going through. You even lost some weight, you aren't the same chubby Simthandile I saw a few months ago at the police station.

I smile faintly.

Me: I don't have the energy to fight anymore. In South Africa money talks more and I don't have money.

Him: But I do.

Me: Your money has nothing to do with me.

Him: It does baby, it does. Let me fight for you.

Me: No I will fight my own battles.

Him: You will tell me when you want my help.

He says caressing my cheeks.

I get close and kiss him, he kisses me back immediately. I run my hands on his dick as we are kissing, I can feel him getting hard.

Mhhh....he's very big. He runs his hands on my thighs then he moves them to my pussy, am only wearing a underwear no pants, he puts his hand in my pussy inserting one finger in followed by the other and he starts finger fucking me. I moan in his mouth, I unbutton his zipper, I really want to blow job him but hey am following the leader he pushes me to lay on the bed as he pulls out his wet fingers with my cum dripping down. He kisses me as I am unbuttoning his shirt I take it of followed by his vest he is now on top of me, he moves from my mouth to my neck and to my nipples he kisses my breasts sucking on them. He goes down to my belly kissing me and he

opens my legs wide and kisses my inner thighs

Insert 51.



Simthandile's POV.



I feel someone brushing my hair, I open my eyes slightly and close them again. I have a terrible headache, *OMG* this is so bad. I open my eyes again and am meet by Bongani, he's very sexy this one, the sex was good and I would love some more of it. I blush, he kisses my cheek.

Him: Uleli kahle kodwa mnkam.

-Did you sleep well.

Me: Ngileli kahle Zulu, ngiyabonga.

- I slept well Zulu, thank you.

He smiles and kisses my cheek again.

Me: I need to bath and rush back to my hotel room. I have a meeting today.

Him: Oh ohk. Can we shower together.

He asks getting up from the bed.

Me: What?

Him: Can we shower together?

Me: Uhm...

Him: Please, this is the last time am seeing you.

Me: Sure.

I get up with the bed sheets and go to the shower. Am fucking limping, I've never been this fucked. Fucken nigga knows what he is doing.

Me: What's the time.

Him: It's 11:30. He says pointing at the watch on the wall. Who the hell still keeps wall watches, not even my mom has those.

Me: What the fuck?! I missed two of my meetings. Damn this will have to be a very

quick shower. Am sure my clothes reek of alcohol, I'll have to go to my place and change.

Him: Don't worry I got you clothes but am not sure if you'll like the dress or what. My brother's wife was the one who chose the dress and shoes.

Ohk, I have one thing covered.

Me: Do you mind driving me back to my hotel room and then to my meeting?

We get in the shower together.

Him: No not at all.

He says with a smile on his face.

Him: On one condition.

Me: Am all ears.

Him: We go on a date tonight.

Me: Ummm....

Him: Yes.

Me: It's a deal.

Him: Be ready at 7pm. He says scrubbing my back.

Mbali's POV.

Lurra is not here, he went to school he didn't want to leave me and Owe alone, I had to force him to go to school and he will pass at the club before coming here. Owe is sleeping and I just took a bath, am standing in front of the mirror my body looks terrible, I have stretch marks all over my body, this is disgusting. My body is not as pretty as it was before, it's not the body that Lurra fell in love with, getting a baby fucked up with my body. I doubt I'll make it as a model, models have pretty bodies with no stretch marks, they have tiny waists and I don't have all that. I should just forget about this whole modelling thing and focus on waitressing. My phone rings and I answer it. It's Owam.
Him: Hey sis, please open the door, we've been knocking.

I sigh.

Me: Am coming. Give me 10 min, I'll be there. I lotion and put on my onesies it's a little bit cold outside.

I open the door and he is there with Lonke, Chuma and Zano.

Me: Is that food?

Zano: It is baby sis. Thought I should bring you something I've been way to busy to even see my sister.

Me: I understand you are a very busy man big bro.

Wam: Thina asibonakali, kubonakala abanemali?

I laugh.

Me: Money is more attractive than looks. I say letting them in.

Me: I need to clean, this is not on.

Lulo: We will help you clean.

Me: But-

Lulo: Whoah, I thought you weren't going to ask. You come on a dinner date with us. I

mean you passed so well. We need to spoil you and us but mostly a new mom.

Chuma: I heard being a first time mom can be depressing at times. I also heard how families make it hard for first time moms so we thought we could come and help with baby Owe and also spoil you a little.

Wam: Before you lose your mind cause kuyaphambanisa ubanomntana.

Me: Am already nuts, ndinixelele.

Zano: Where's Lurra?

Me: He went to school, I think he'll be back in a hour or so. He'll also pass by the club.

Him and Lurra are so close and I love to see it. They get along so well, am even jealous. He hasn't meet Zuu and Q though, am sure he'll also like them. He'll definitely like Zuu, just like how he likes Owam. I mean Owam and Zuu are one thing, they are what we call "umgubo wengxowa enye". Ohh and Bra Rich and Zano offerered to pay my school fees but

am thinking of going to college I will see varsity next year and am also thinking of doing online learning but am not sure. I have until next month to decide that's what Zano told me. I dish up for me and the guys and serve them.

--

Vuyolwam's POV.

My mom is getting really better and she hates depending on me but she has no choice and I have two jobs right now, I can help with her medication. Am cleaning up in the house these kids messing it up every chance they get. I also need to cook being the first born can be annoying at times, I don't really enjoy being a deputy parent yazi. I don't know how others enjoy this cause this is not enjoyable man. Sinethemba walks in with muddy shoes.

Me: Sinethemba! Sine, phuma phuma!

She runs outside and leaves her shoes out.

Her: Am sorry., She says walking into the room.

She comes back with her torn school shoes.

Her: Vuyo, I need new school shoes and a new school bag.

Me: You'll get them month end, I promise Sine.

Her: You said that last month njena.

Me: I know, I know! Am trying okay!

Her: Try harder Vuyolwam! You ain't trying!

You are busy with that rich guy, Sandile

Mkhize now Zanolkhanyo Mandoyi! That's all you know, ukufeba!

Me: Voetsek! I say slapping her.

Me: Listen here and listen carefully.

Andizunyelwa nguwe mna and if you feel like

you are old enough and you can try better

than I do go ahead yevha! Futhi I won't be

getting you any shoes, rhaa uyanya ngoku!

Her: Uxolo ke. Please get me the shoes and I won't disrespect you again.

Me: Andiyontanga yakho msunu. Futhi uzopheka ngokwakho andisekho apho mna!
I say going outside, annoyed as hell.

Zanokhanyo's POV

I just got off a call with Vuyo she's not her usual self, I feel like she's angry I'll talk to her later right now I have to deal with my so called mom and dad. I drive in and park. I can hear music blasting, it can only be Sfiso who plays amapiano so loud. I walk in after texting Vuyo that I'll pass by her house later today. I'll bring her something to cheer her up, I don't know anything about gifts, Amina will help me pick somethings for her. I walk in the house. Sifiso spots me as I'm getting in.

Sifiso: Bhuti.

Me: Bafo, kunjani?

Sifiso: Ngikhona bafo, U'right wena?

Me: Ngiright nkabiyami. Baphi abazali?
I say taking some of the muffins. He's
baking, he loves baking. I wonder if Sifiso,
Amina, Thembinkosi, Zoey were also adopted.
I don't know.

Him: Dad is in his study, mom is in the
garden.

Me: please ask her to meet us in the study.
Is everyone else home?

Him: We are all home bhuti.

Me: Good, I need all of you in the next 2
minutes.

Him: Ohk bhuti.

He says washing his hands. I head up to my
father's office. I knock and he shouts come
in, I walk in. I have the whole Mandoyi family
album and some of the slips when they
transferred money to the Mandoyi's, I also
have letters with their signatures on. Dad
gave them to me, he said he kept them for

the future, I guess this is the future he kept them for.

Him: Ndodana. He says getting up from his chair.

Me: Bab' Mkhize. I say hugging him back.

Him: Unjani kodwa ndodana, asisakwazi la ekhaya.

Me: Ngiyaphila baba, ngingezwa kuwe.

Him: Nam ngiyaphila ndoda.

Me: Baba we need to talk. Me, you, mom and my siblings.

Him: You sound serious and angry. Let me call them for you.

Me: Don't worry baba, I called them.

He nods settling down. Mom walks in with the rest of my siblings.

Insert 52.



Nosipho's POV.



Am sitting outside drinking sugared water. Life will humble you, I tell you. Me and my parents are renting a shack in Alexandra just imagine a whole me in Alex. Mbali's father has the liver shame, you know this old men just came and took everything my parents worked so hard for. He took every little thing that had my parents name on it, I fucking hate him yoh but he's sexy really sex trust me. I need to get out of this place, I also failed my matric am considering going to college. Mbali did say alcohol and men don't take me anywhere. My mom calls me I get up.
"Ma"

I say sitting next to her.

"Life is really hard these days but am sure you are really hungry nantsi iR20 buy

yourself a Kota or something and don't tell your father I gave you money."

I nod and get up going to the shop. I buy myself a Kota and airtime I dial Mbali. I just want her advice nothing serious. She picks up on the third ring.

"Hey, how can I help you?"

She doesn't have my number, I got hers from Kuhle. "Hey Mbali, it's me Nosi. Please don't drop the call I really need to talk to you." I say pleading with her "Talk am all ears" She says in the most harsh tone, that's so rude of her.

"Mbali, I called to let you know am sorry about how I treated you and I hope you find it in your heart to forgive me and my parents for what we did to you."

"What did you do to me kanene?" She says shushing her baby.

"We mistreated you, abused you in all type of ways."

"Do you think sorry is going to fix everything Nosipho? Do you think sorry is going to solve all the problems!"

" Sorry won't fix anything but I just wanted you to know how sorry I am."

" Your sorry isn't going to do anything for me, I'll tell you that. I have so many scars in my fucking body because you always lied to your parents and said I did something, I always got beaten up locked up in the shark for days without food. I've been in and out of hospital for things I didn't do."

"Am sorry." I say in a whisper.

"No, no am not done talking. You know how hard it is not having a mom and having someone rub it in your face all the time? You know how hard it is to live without a mother and you were always reminded of it each and every chance. You don't even fucken now how it feels to use a cloth as a pad only. You don't

know half of the shit you and your family put me through."

"Uxolo Mbaliyothando."

"Cut it Nosipho, I've had it with you and your family okay. You remember when you and your mom made me sleep with the dogs in the dogs house? You guys even locked me there. You guys used to body shame me, you guys made sure I hated each and every day of my life on Earth. Luncumo had to deal with a broken woman, he had to work twice as hard to make sure that I don't try killing myself. You guys fucken broke me. I haven't healed Nosipho!" She says crying.

"Bhabha, what's going. Why are you crying and screaming?" A male voice says.

"Am fine Luncumo, it's nothing serious.

Nosipho I don't know what I did to you and your family but whatever it is that I did please forgive me."

She says and drops the call.

Life gets harder as you grow older. I don't know what to do with my life but I'll make a plan.

Zanokhanyo's POV.

We are gathered around father's desk eating muffins, am slowly getting angry..

"Ndodana you said you wanted to talk to us."

"I did baba. Was I adopted or what?"

Mom and dad both start coughing, my siblings have all their eyes out.

"No you weren't my son, who fed you that garbage." Mom responds.

"So you carried all of us for 9 months?"

"What nonsense is this, what are you asking your mom mfana."

" Did she really carry us for 9 months or she just paid poor families money to get us?"

"Of course I did carry you for 9 months Sandile!" Mom shouts with tears streaming

down her cheeks, she can cry all she wants
IDGAF.

"Zanokhanyolwe Mandoyi, xa unexesha."

They both gasp.

"Bhuti what are you talking about?" Amina asks rubbing her mom's back.

"We were all adopted. Not really adopted but our parents can't have babies so they stole some, adopted some and bought some."

I tell them.

"Where did you get that Sandile, why are you lying about mom?" Zoey asks.

Mom cries and screams.

"Are you saying we've been living a lie all our lives?"

"Yes we have been living a lie."

"You can't come to my house and talk like that about me and my wife!" Dad roars.

Am not moved, he can roar all he wants but we need to know the truth at the end of the day.

"Mom is this true? Tell me he is lying, Sandile this is not a joke right?" Thembinkosi says already pissed.

"Mma tell me he is lying!" He says getting up from his chair.

"Am not Sandile, Am Zanokhanyolwethu Mandoyi."

I correct him.

Mom cries shaking her head no. Dad reaches for his gun in the table.

"Taima you won't kill me for telling the truth. You always told us we need to know imvelaphi yethu and you are getting angry when I find where am from. Mom do you really want to be the reason another woman cries herself to sleeping feeling like they failed their kids. Ma tell the truth please, am not about to motivate you to do what's right, I'll just call the cops on you."

I say taking out there things I had with me.

"Am not all talk and stuff, I come with full proof, I met my sister Mbaliyothando Mandoyi at a restaurant somewhere last year."

I say passing my siblings the papers and the Dna tests results me and Mbali did.

"She told me I looked like her mom I didn't believe her, she also told me her grandparents told her parents her brother had died, she also had pictures of me and her while we were still young. This year I decided to do a follow-up after she showed me pictures of her brother, who happened to be me. I met my father Richard Mandoyi unfortunately my mother is late. Rumor has it you guys bought me from my grandparents."

"Bastard!" Dad curses in a whisper.

"I've been spending a lot of time with my family, they are cool people, they don't have much but they are my family and I love them."

Mom starts talking.

"Zoey you were stolen at the hospital a few days after your mom gave birth to you. Your real name is Oratile Mathiyane, your were born in Garankuwa and you have a twin brother."

Zoey wails, her tears stream down she's suffocating. Dad looks at mom with a "what did you just do" look.

"They deserve to know myeni wam." My mom tells her husband as she is wiping her tears.

"Thembi, we bought you from your grandparents after your mom had fallen pregnant as a teenager and they didn't have the money to take care of you same applies to Sandile. Thembi your real name is Langelihle Nkuna and Sandile yours is ZanoKhanyolwethu Mandoyi like you said."

"Wow mom just fucken amazing! So we've been living a lie all these fucken years that's

great!" Thembi says getting up and leaving the room.

"Amina, you were adopted we promised your mom money to better her life so she can go and study she needed funding, she was our help, we pay her each and every month 40 000 so she does not tell you anything. She's been following you around for a while now. She's was once your teacher when we found out we moved you to another school. She is Nomthandazo Mbatha. She used to teacher you N.S in Grade 5."

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 53.



Mbali's POV.



[4 Months Later]

So my baby is about 5 Months and 1 week which means, I can go back to work and get money. I'll stop depending on Lurra, I was starting to feel like a burden to him, even though he didn't tell me I was but damn plus I've thought my self not to depend on anyone, anymore. Am in the kitchen making breakfast cause we are all going to school, I have classes today by the way Zano pulled a few connections and I got accepted at Wits, Ncumo is also going to school, Owe is going to his great-grandma then Amina (Amina is Zano's younger sister from the Mkhizes) she wanted to get away from them) she's 14 doing Grade 9. We recently found out her mom passed, her mom was a twin so the money was given to her twin and the twin is the one who has been following Amina. This is my second month at school and am already late, Mr Mazibuko will have my head for

breakfast. Luncumo walks in carrying Owe. Lately he's been helping with Owe because he is less fragile, shocking right but I'm grateful you know and having Amina here has also been helpful.

"Good morning sthandwa sam."

He says kissing my cheeks.

"Mmh, morning baby."

I say swallowing the food. I'm eating in a hurry.

"Why are you eating so fast bhabha?"

"I'm late for classes sthandwa sam and please tell Gogo I'll be late today because I'm going to work."

He nods.

"I pumped out some milk for Owe but I'm thinking of stopping breastfeeding and I've packed his bag. If you are coming back early please fetch Amina from school because Zano won't be able to then ukhupha inyama I'll cook it when I come back. I already packed

his bag but please double check if everything is there cause I packed in a hurry. I ironed your clothes already they are hanged on the wardrobe door and your shoes are next to the bed, my side."

He looks at me trying to cram what I said.

"Do you mind taking Owe to your granny my way to school passes at Amina's school so I'll take her to school. Amina, let's go!"

I shout taking my bag. She appears and walks out before I do. I turn back to kiss Owe and Ncumo.

"Bye! I love you guys, Lurra please wash the dishes if possible then put the clothes in the washing machine, it's Friday today and you know how busy it gets at work! Take Amina to dad's house am sure you'll be busy at the club."

I shout. I walk as fast as I can to catch up with Mina.

"Amina how do you feel since the Mkhizes told you the truth."

I say fixing her tie, I overslept today so if I oversleep everyone is going to be late cause no one thinks of setting their own alarm, balinda uMbali. You can tell she got dressed in a hurry. Zano made sure she got a new school away from her parents.

" Am okay, it's nice living with you and bhuti Luncumo, am a little bit happy because from my parents we never really got love it's always been money then their reputation and we came last, am getting the love this side. I really enjoy eating Gogo's dumplings and stew and your dad is the best dad ever. Last week he took me to the park and we bought ice cream along the way and he also bought me a teddy bear, am sure he was the best dad when you were younger."

I choke on my saliva and nod.

"He was, he was a really good father."

Why am I lying. I fake a smile.

"How's school, are you enjoying?"

"Yes, I am this school is funny really but there's this boy..."

I hold my breath hoping she doesn't tell me she likes him but if she likes someone who am I to judge, all I can do I advice and support her.

"There's one boy, I want to kill he is such a bully! Everyone here fears him and he is constantly making fun of my body. He calls me "vetkoek" imagine!"

I think I'll need to talk to my father about this so he can come and talk to the principal.

"The teachers here are also body-shaming us, arghh it's getting to my nerves. Have you ever been bullied."

She says turning to face me.

"I have, since my mom passed away I was bullied but when my brothers weren't there. They always made jokes about the clothes I

wore, my body weight everything of mine was a joke. At some point I even stopped going to school cause I was afraid of getting mocked or having someone throw a plate of food in my face cause they did because they knew I went on for days without food and there only time I had food was when I was at school. I've tried committing suicide a lot of times but it always failed."

I say trying not to cry. She wipes my tears and pulls me into a warm tight hug.

"Where was your father?"

I sigh and let my tears drop.

"My father was framed for murder by his own brother cause he wanted my mother, my father's businesses and his house. He got released last year on good behavior and he is still trying to find evidence that he didn't kill his best friend."

She hugs me once again.

"Am sorry, I didn't know and I didn't mean to-"

I interrupt her.

"No. It's okay really. Look we are here."

I announce as we approach the school gate.

"Bye, I love you. Bhuti Luncumo is fetching me after school moss?"

She shouts running towards the school gate.

My phone beeps and it's a message from my father.

"I'd like to adopt Amina, I need to talk to you and Zano."

I put my phone back in my pocket after reading the text over and over again. Lucky me cause I got a taxi, I hope I am not late. I don't even know why I have classes so early in the morning.

Simthandile's POV.

So am back in Joburg, my exposé went well the guy got arrested and am so damn happy

cause I got a promotion this was what I needed in my career. I also got a raise cabanga all of this in 3 months am so happy, Nkosi bought me a new apartment so he can control me, that's stupid shame, he also moved the other wives to Gauteng but they haven't gotten jobs so he does everything for them and him doing everything gives them the upper hand. It's such a pity that he decide to get I an apartment cause Dibongz, mabong bong Zulu got me a perfect one, it's really pretty. Me and Bongani had sex on the day we meet at the club, the following day we took a shower together it was innocent since I was later the very same day we went on a date and we had 4 other dates before he asked me to be his girlfriend I even stopped wearing my ring, I no longer have sex with Nkosi even having Nkosi next to me pisses me off. Bongani and I are walking on plan to bring mighty Nkosi down. My phone rings as

am getting dressed, it's Bongani, I answer it and go to the balcony.

"Aww mama, unjani Makoti wako Zulu."

I laugh a little.

"Ngiphilile Ndabezitha ngingezwa kuwe."

He laughs.

"Ngiyaphila ma, I called you to let you know me and you are going out. Yezwa mnkam?"

I blush crazily, I love this guy really.

"Yebo Mageba. I'll be ready at 7pm. My secret apartment Zulu."

He laughs.

Ngiyakthanda yezwa mama."

I peek through the sliding door to see whether Nkosi is coming out.

"Nam Ngiyakthanda sthandwa sam."

"Ithi ngikakubambezeli, have a good day mama."

He drops the call.

I get back to my room and Nkosi is there.

"Who was that?"

He says looking at me up and down.

"Who was what?"

I say putting on my t-shirt followed by my jacket.

"Simthandile who was that!"

He gets up and slaps me, I hold my cheek and burning ear.

"Simthandile are you cheating on me and where is your ring."

He says strangling me. I cough.

"Ohh that ring I lost it. I told you it was too big, I think it fell. Am not sure."

I say struggling to breath.

He slaps me and punches me in my stomach a few times, he punches me in my face. I take the vase on the mini table next to us and hit him with it he falls. I get my shoes, bag and car keys and lock the door. I reverse my car playing Ariana Grande's break free.

Luncumo's POV.

Ntando has been acting a bit suspicious lately, I don't know man he's been giving me brotherly love and he's a little bit overprotective. He also called me when I was on my way to drop Owe asking if we could meet up, told him he can come to the club after my 3 classes at school, bhabha only has two classes she was so pissed cause it's so early in the morning. There's a knock on my door, I check the time it's 1pm, I guess it's Ntando he has only one hour then I have to fetch Amina from school and take her to bhabha's dad, bhabha texted me she's on her way to work she always does that everytime her location changes. Ever since the Zwane and Lunga incident, she says if anything ever happens to her she wants to be trackable not like the last time. My mom walks in first followed by Ntando.

"What the hell is she doing here?"

I get up from my chair pissed as hell.

"Soyama please hear me out, I want to fix our relationship. I want you to know all of your siblings. Please give me a chance baby."
She says walking over to me.

"Please hear her out ntwana. All she wants to do is talk. I know it won't be easy forgiving her but please ntwana hear her out."

I click my tongue and sit down.

"Nizoma or?"

They both settle down.

"Soyama-"

"Luncumo Mphati, am not Soyama."

She swallows hard and holds on tighter to her handbag.

"Nana, am so sorry for everything I've done to you okay. Please-"

I check my watch.

"Sindi you are wasting my time. I have things to do. Not so long ago you were in my house accusing me of killing Zwane and disturbed me and my girl's morning glory session and

now you are in my office disturbing me while am making money for my wife and son. Leave am busy!"

I get up from my chair.

"I have a kid to fetch from school, now get up and leave!"

I say banging the table, they both get up.

"Wena Ntando keep this bloody bastard far away from me."

He gets closer to me.

"I won't let you talk to my mom like that."

He says attempting to punch but I hold his hand.

"Landela umamakho mfano mncane.

Nzakubetha unye kwedini."

He walks out following his mother. So the fucker is my brother, wow. Can this day get any worse?

Insert 54.





Luncumo's POV.



Damn! So he is my brother wow, just wow what a unlucky fucker I am. I pick up my phone and dial ubhabha, she answers on the third ring as long as she answered.

"Ncumo. How is my big baby doing?"

I laugh a little.

"Am fine baby, I just miss you. I want you to hug me."

She sighs and asks someone to take her orders for her.

"What's wrong Ncumo?"

Am on my third glass of castle light.

"My mom was here nana, not just that she also told me thee one and only Ntando is my brother. This woman is so focused on making my life miserable."

I sigh deeply and continue.

"Now because am trying to get my shit together she's all over my face, she's annoying mani. She just rocked up at my workplace and made it look like all is well.

Uyadika lomfazi."

"Ncumo I won't tell you to forgive your mother. Take your time and heal Ncumo and when you are ready to sit down and talk to her do so. Don't rush the healing process, just focus on yourself. Ask her to give you space to heal. She can't really accept you to wake up one Monday morning and decide you know what "I forgive my mom for everything she did" and you guys just move on with life. At this point she isn't even making effort to make sure you forgive her. She's hiding behind Ntando and the fact that she carried you for 9 months."

I sigh rubbing my face.

"I love you bhabha and thank you. I'll see you at home sthandwa."

"I love you more and it's my pleasure. You can call me anytime and I'll be available for you, anytime any place for you sthandwa sam."

"Marry me bhabha, I can't live without you." She laughs.

"I'll definitely marry you, I love you. Let me get back to work sthandwa sam."

Bhabha is my go to person, am feeling a whole lot better now but one tight hug from her will do. I pack up my stuff and prepare to go what bhabha asked me to do and I'll also cook or prepare home made pizza I haven't done that in a very long time, am definitely doing it for supper and am sure she'll be super tired, I'll fetch Amina so she can help me do this for bhabha.

Am at bhabha's home, I knock and Mr Mandoyi opens for me, he gets in and I follow behind him.

"Mfana wam, how are you? You were in a hurry when you dropped off Amina."

"Ndiyaphila Tata, I was rushing to the club, it's a very busy day today. Tata am here to fetch Amina, I need her help am planning a mini surprise for bhabha and I don't know anything about girly stuff, lord help me!"

Her father bursts out laughing.

I spot Amina sitting on the couch, eating ice cream watching a girly movie, she seems to be enjoying whatever she's watching.

"My daughter is so lucky to have you. Thank you for taking care of her when I wasn't here, if it wasn't for you, am sure my daughter would have been long dead. Thank you Tolo."

Not even bhabha calls me tolo.he takes my hand for a handshake.

"I don't promote vat & sit but you were there for her on her darkest days and am sure she feels safer when she's around you. I'll let this pass but sooner or later we will have to talk about this."

I nod.

He calls Amina for me and we are off.

Simthandile's POV

Am at my apartment the one Bongani got me and preparing for our dinner, am trying to hide my scars as he walks in.

"Thandile, what happened. Please don't tell me that bloody wanna be husband of yours dead this cause if he did.... Oh Lord help me." He says walking to me dropping the phone he had in his hand.

"It's nothing Ndabezitha am fine, this is just a little scar. Am fine."

He chuckles bitterly.

"This is nothing Simmy? This is not nothing, am seriously going to kill this bastard. Simmy am killing this shit of a man!"

He roars & I turn to look at him.

His eyes are red, veins popping out. I run my hands on his arms and he looks at me clenching his jaws.

"Baby please let me kill that bastard of yours. Am begging you."

He says pulling me closer to him.

"Please baby, let me do this."

He says kissing my forehead.

"Does he do this to the other wives also."

I keep quiet and rest my head on his chest.

He lifts my head up.

"Simmy ngikubuze umbuzo."

I nod, letting my tears fall.

"Please don't kill him Bongani, he has kids I don't want to feel guilty for the rest of my life knowing Emihle and the others are fatherless because of me."

He looks at me with thinking eyes.

"Promise me you won't do it Bongani."

He keeps quiet.

"Bongani."

He sighs.

"I won't, I promise you sthandwa sam but if he dares puts his filthy hands on you again, I swear Simmy."

I kiss him.

"These look bad baby, how are you feeling?"

Me and Bongani decided to stay in and make our own dinner making dinner with this man of mine was fun really. We are now in bed cuddling watching a movie from my laptop

"First Sunday" is the name of the movie. I hate to burst his bubble but am leaving, I have to get back to my other apartment.

"Bongani, I need to go home, Nkosi will be back home in the next hour."

He focuses on the movie like I didn't just tell him, I need to go back home. Am afraid Nkosi might hit me plus his been calling the whole day and he knows I didn't go to work apparently he went to see if I was in but he was told I called in sick when Bongani went to the bathroom I had the chance to listen to his voice messages and am honestly afraid.

"Babe did you hear what I said?"

"I heard you Simmy and ngithi awuyi lapho."

He doesn't understand does he.

"Please Bongani, he'll hit me."

"Simthandile awuyi lapho, ngiyazwakala noma ufuna ngikuphindele?"

"What will I tell him Bongani."

"Tell him you slept at Cynthia's place or something."

-

Mbali's POV.

Am on my way to fetch Owe from Gogo I knocked off at 4:00 today because Mam' Lindi's restaurant was booked and she choose only 3 waiters to be there and she didn't choose me, am so glad andidinwe you have no idea. I get to Gogo's house and there are 4 cars, I hesitate in going in but I decide to cause I need to fetch my son, I knock and this guy let's me in, it's either he is Lurra's age or younger than him. I get in and I spot Owe carried by this very cute magogo. I find Gogo's very creepy at times but that one she's hot and screams money. My baby cries as he sees him. Lurra's Gran calls me, I walk over to her. I first take Owe from the woman and he keeps quiet.

Gogo: Family this is Mbaliyothando, Owe's mom and luncumo's girlfriend.

Ehh baba this woman just put on the spotlight just like that did she really have to announce all this.

Gogo: Mbali this is Owe's family from our side.

I nod, looking down. My phone rings and it's Lurra. I look and it and put it back in pocket but he calls again, his granny insists I answer it even after I told her "it's not important" but her response was "it's important judging by the way this person is calling"

Me: Uhm ye..yes.

Him: Why do you sound nervous, is there something wrong?

Me: No, no there's nothing wrong.

Him: Are you sure? Bhabha talk to me am worried here.

Me: There's nothing wrong, I promise you stop worrying. Uzomelwa yintliziyo umncinci yazz.

Him: You promise.

Me: I can't swear on Owe's life or mine because I know you'd kill for us, so I'll swear

on my dad and brother's life since they don't affect you. How's that?

Him: Fair enough, I was freaking out. I love you.

I shift uncomfortably and turn to look at everyone but no one is really paying attention to me, besides the woman who was holding Owe, the guy who opened for me and his grandmother. I think it's safe for me to respond.

Me: Mhhh, I..I love you more.

They all turn to look at me.

Him: At what time do you think you will be home?

Gogo: Is that Luncumo?

Me: Ewe makhulu.

I say biting my lips....

Gogo: Greet him for me and tell him his cousins are here.

I nod..

Gogo: Tell him now.

Me: Ncumo your granny says hi and your cousins are here.

He curses..

Him: forgot about them coming, totally forgot Cindy pissed me off today. Ehh magriza will have to forgive me tell her me and you have plans.

Me: He says hi gogo.

"Put him on loud speaker" says one of the ladies.

Me: An order came forward in the next 2 seconds you'll be on louder speaker.

Him: Shit, baby don't do that to me. Bhabha, sthandwa sam please jonga I'll get you that laptop you were saving for and bag that carries a baby phambili idk the name but you know what am talking about baby just don't. Everyone cracks up cause wow.

Me: I hate to break it to you but you are on loud speaker.

Him and his family talk for a while and he asks them to excuse me because I can't travel at night nomntana and he lies about us having plans, which I don't remember. I have the key to his backroom so I go there and change Owe's napkin, I breastfeed him and lay him on the bed while I get some of mine and Ncumo's few stuff that we left behind. There's a knock on my door and the person walks in.

Him: Hi, am Sihle luncumo's younger brother. Ohh so this means this is his family from his dad's side.

Me: Hi Sihle how are you? He talks about you a lot you know.

He laughs like he doesn't believe what I just told him

Him: He does?

Me: Yes, he does you are the youngest of all 9 kids and you are 20 y/o but older than me well you are turning 20 this year somewhere

in November and you are his relative from his fathers side. He also told me you are doing your second year, electrical engineer. Am I correct?

Him: Yes. I wanted to meet the girl taima told me he knocked up. You are pretty.

I laugh.

Me: What?! Me pretty? You are playing with me have you seen how I look since I gave birth I don't look like half of what I looked like before pregnancy.

He laughs.

Him: You are still pretty and definitely cute.

Me: Thank you. Look I need to leave before your brother sends his army to come search for me after the whole kidnap and rape thing he gets worried if am not home.....

I... Shit...did not just blab about the kidnap and rape thing.

He looks at me shocked.

Him: Kidnap and rape-,

Me: No, it's nothing serious it's just something that Uhm happened where we...uhm....look I need to get going you weren't suppose to hear that. Please don't ever talk about it.

I pick Owe up and put him on my back and take the rest of my stuff and walked past him. He holds my hand and I yank it off.

Me: Please I need to leave.

Him: Mbali....

Me: No I don't want to hear it.

He leaves and I walk out and lock my door. I don't even pass by the house to tell them I left, I just drag my ass and leave.

When I got home Luncumo and Amina had prepared dinner for me made it a little but girly then movies. Then for first time since we had Owe we had sex that was good my fucken cookie is on fire it's 11pm.

He collapses next to me after trying the pull out method which I think was weak I guess am going for after pills cause wow he's pull out game be weak asf. He is still playing with my clit, I moan a little.

Him: One last round bhabha.

Me: Am not on drugs Ncumo.

There's a knock.

Him: Who in their right mind knocks at this time of the night.

We both get dressed and head for the door, I just put on his gown and nothing else and he got a short on and we both bare footed.

We open and it's his grandmother and some of his siblings. I spot Sihle looking at me with a worried look. Then it hits me Sihle might have told them, so I whisper to Lurra what happened as we walking them in, he stares at me and curses under his breath. We settle down.

Gogo: Luncumo, Mbali got kidnapped and you didn't tell us, on top of that she got raped Luncumo!

Him: Mama we live with 2 kids and right now they are sleeping and you can't be shouting plus you don't just come to someone's house unannounced banging their door like mad mense. We were going to tell you when we were ready, wena Sihle stay out of things that do not concern you. Don't you feel like are invading bhabha's privacy she told and kindly asked you to keep it a secret and you decide to tell the whole flipping world her.....our personal issues. If she wanted them to know she would have sat them down and notified them.

Sihle nods, swallowing his saliva.

Gogo: When did this happen and do you know who did such an evil act?

Me: When I was-

Ncumo cuts me off.

Him: Gogo, bhabha will talk to you when she's ready this is still a fresh, very fresh wound. Please leave.

They all gasp.

Him: Leave! bhabha I'll lock go to bed.

I shake my head no.

Him: Mbali.

He says in a warning way but also I'll fuck the brains out of you if you disobey.

I walk to our room and throw myself in the bed.

I can hear him shouting at them telling them to leave before he kills one of them. After what seems like forever he gets in bed and wipes my tears.

Him: Am sorry, I didn't know they'd show up here and do all this dump shit.

Me: It's not your fault. I shouldn't have mentioned to Sihle how much you get worried since that incident.

Insert 55.



Luncumo's POV.



It's early hours of the morning, am not okay I didn't sleep a wink, uSihle uyaphapha someone has to put him in his place before he gets out of hand. I get up from the bed, bhabha already left for work then at 12:00 she'll go to school and I have to drop Owe off then head to the club since I have no classes today.

I take a bath and make sure to feed Owe, and we make our way to Gramms house and when I get there I find about 6 cars, idk why the hell these people are still at my mother's house. I click my tongue and make my in, I don't knock. I greet one of my cousins who is

making breakfast for all these people, I haven't seen in years. Sihle and dad were the only ones who kept contact with me. I walk over to Gramms and kiss her cheek.

Me: Unjani mama?

Her: Am fine nana, aren't you supposed to be at work?

Me: Am only going at 10:00, which is in the next 40 minutes. Mama andihlelanga I just came to drop Owe and head to the club.

She nods and gets up to hug me.

Her: Ncumo can I please talk to you?

Me: Okay mama.

She leads me to her bedroom, she sits on the bed and I sit next to her.

Her: Ncumo am sorry about what we did the other day, we didn't mean to make Mbali feel uncomfortable.

Me: Well she is uncomfortable and she resigned from dropped Owe off.

Her: Please tell her we are sorry, we should have thought about it before showing up at your doorstep and shouting like crazy people. I look at her.

Me: Mama am not going to say it's fine cause it's not. You can't just show up at someone's doorstep demanding to know things about their personal life. You know bhabha was healing she was doing so well until you guys showed up, she had forgotten all about it but you guys brought it all up.

Bhabha hasn't been okay since the family decided to show up and go all crazy on us. She cries her self to sleep at times, she's not coping.

Me: Bhabha cries herself to sleep since you guys showed up and interrogated her, I don't think you should be apologizing to me am not the one who's privacy was invaded and I was not the one disrespected.

Her: I will apologize to her nyana. That's all I wanted to say.

I get up and make my way out but I turn and head back to mom's room.

Me: Mama please give her space she will talk to you when she's ready. For now I will be the one dropping Owe off.

With that said, I left.

I've been at the club for a while now I finally decided to text Sihle and ask him to come see me. Someone needs to put him in his place before it's late, he responds immediately to my text and I send him the location.

I get up and go outside for a smoke, I know it's shocking but I only smoke when am stressed out, nothing serious and right now this Sihle issue is stressing me and on the other hand I have Godmother who just made

one hell of a offer to me, which I doubt I can resist.

Jonga this women wants me to join her in heists, am taking about robbing banks, cars and all that shit, I've always wanted to join that team not the drug team but know we have a problem. At first I was making decisions for me only now before I take decisions I have to think about my baby and my wife damn life gets hard.

She only gave me 1 week to think about this, I really want to do this the money is good. I pick up my phone and dial Godmother.

Her: Mphati I hope you've made your decision and hope you have good news for me. I have been ready for this just about 7 heists, I will be sorted not for the rest of my life but for now. I need money to buy shares from where bhabha works, Sandile told me that the lady is said to be in a financial mess and I want to make her a

offer she can't resist and take 60% shares and leave her with the 40%, I swear I'll be sorted after this.

Me: I will join the team, I don't need training Godmother I've been ready and yes am joining you for the next heist. When is it?

Her: Mphati, I need you tra-

Me: Do you want me to join your team or what?

Her: I do Mphati, the team needs you But-

Me: Then when is the next heist?

Her: In the next 3 Weeks, be here midnight so you can meet the rest of the team, 11pm.

Me: Sho.

I drop the call.

I go back inside and spot Sihle seated in one of the chairs, I walk up to him.

Me: Let's go to the office ntsizwa.

He gets up and walks after me.

Him: This place looks good, you have good taste.

I chuckle.

Me: I didn't do anything here, bhabha did all this. I was thinking of getting a tarven like place but she kicked my idea and made it club and she made it look like this.

I hear him chuckle uncomfortably.

Him: She did a good job, you are lucky to have her man.

This club is a Kasi themed club, the car tyre type of chairs, tables which look a little bit like the chairs here, then it has a VIP section which Kwanda suggested we add and well the people who work here are people from the hood, some of them I knew from school and some were friends bhabha used to smoke with when her mom died. She decided we here locals, give the youth of our the jobs not some random. Well both Kwanda and Bhabha said I have to have my own office just to get the boss feel, so yeah the boy has

his own office. We get in the office, I close the door behind me.

Me: Yintoni undiqhela kakubi kwedini? Ucimba kukwanyoko apha?

Him: Bhuti?

Me: Nyuti my left foot, kanti what's wrong with you?

Him: What are you talking about?

I chuckle and get closer to him but he moves back.

Me: Sphesihle yintoni saqhelana kakubi mna nawe? Kutheni undinyela boy?

Him: I thought gogo deserved to know Luncumo. Besides you have a record of hitting people and am sure you've kidnapped a few.

I burst out, laughing not believing what this boy is telling me.

Him: Not forgetting you killed grandpa.

I take a deep breath trying not to faint like the last time I did, to a point where Qs mom

thought of taking me back to the hospital. Thank god, I called Q to meet up with me. Me and him are one so when Godmother wants me she will also take Q with. Q walks in and strangles Sihle.

Q: We had a deal, you don't say this to a soul Sihle. You don't talk about it!

I balance with the table losing my breath, I hold my chest, I breath heavily my vision getting blur. I sit down and pour myself water while my hands shake infact my whole body is shaking. Q let's go of Sihle and curses, Sihle drops to the floor coughing.

Q: Are you are okay Lurra.

I nod.

After a few minutes, I gather my strength and walk over to Sihle. I help him up and he runs for the door.

Me: Q you know it was a mistake. I was angry, I spent my whole life watching that man abuse and rape my grandmother, yes it

was a mistake but I don't regret it. He had to die, I've had it with him. Sihle speaking about him just reminds me of all the things he did to Gramms.

Tears drop from my eyes.

Q: I know Mphati, I know.

I wipe my tears and Q pulls me in for a hug.

Q: I know Luncumo and am sorry.

Mbali's POV.

I just got back from school and I have 2 assignments to do but I'll start somewhere during the week not today. I make myself food and settle on the couch, am so tired. I think I fell asleep after eating cause am woken up by a knock, I get up and attend the door. To my surprise it's Sihle.

Me: Ohh hey Sihle. You can come in.

He walks in, he looks bruised like he got beaten up. He has a blue eyes and he is pink

and purple in some places, one eye is swollen and am sure he can't see.

Me: What happened to you? Were you involved in a fight.

Him: Luncumo happened.

My jaw dropped.

Me: Wait, what?! Why would he do that?

Luncumo didn't do this, he would never!

Him: It's because me and his the family showed up and it's also because I didn't obey your wishes.

OMG, how could he do this. I swear am going to kill Luncumo when he gets here.

Him: Am sorry. I didn't mean to disrespect you, I thought the family knew.

Mara why would Luncumo hit iyellow mellow labantu hee? Doesn't he know fragile light skinned men are, they are the Barbie dolls of all men. Why would he hit a whole baby girl mara hhee? Yoh ha.a sana why would he go for a whole slay queen of a man.

Him: Let me get going, I don't want him to find me here.

He says with fear written all over his eyes.

He gets closer and pulls me in for a hug, I hug him back awkwardly. He moves his hands down my back I push his hands before they touch my butt.

Me: You need to leave.

I say opening the door for him.

Him: Mbali please-

Me: Sihle leave now!

Him: Am sorry, I didn't mean to make you feel uncomfortable.

Me: Okay ndikuvile hamba!

He looks at me undressing me with his eyes before walking away.

Insert 56.



MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI.



Luncumo denied ever hitting Sihle, all he said was he called Sihle to the club and Q strangled him. He says he wasn't involved in any of this, maybe Sihle got involved in a fight or something then got hurt and put the blame on him. Ayy mina angisazi, I don't know what or who to believe anymore.

It's Thursday morning our asses are up and running preparing for the day ahead of us.

After we are done preparing for school and work Luncumo shows up with Amina who is carrying Owe, he is carrying their bags.

Ami: Sisi Mbali dad asked if I can sleep over this weekend. I really want to and he said he'll attend the parents meeting at school on your behalf and he'll also talk to the teacher about Mpumelelo.

She says pouting her lips and giving me pleading eyes.

Mpumelelo is the boy who is bullying Ami.

Me: You can sleep at dads but I need you back on Sunday.

She looks at me with disbelief.

Ami: Are you sure?

She hugs me tightly, I giggle. She's so excited maan.

Ami: Mballz am out, am walking with my friends so don't worry.

She kisses Owe then gives me and Lurra hugs then runs out.

Me: Ami lunch money!

Ami: Don't worry dad gave me money boo!

She shouts and slams the gate behind her, I hate people who slams things. Lurra laughs and Owe cries to the top of his lungs. Aww my baby.

Him: I guess it's the three of us.

He settles down and dig into his food, while I breastfeed Owe, I have to stop very soon.

Today am off and I don't have any classes, I will finally rest. He is definitely going to his great grandma's house, no way am staying with him during the week.

Him: Bhabha can you please take Owe to Gramms place.

Me: I can't, am busy.

He looks at me shocked.

Him: With what bhabha? You don't have any classes and you are off, so what is it that you are busy with?

He says looking a bit annoyed, am not going to his granny's house.

After feeding Owe, I put him on the sofa so I can also eat.

Me: Andifuni ke Luncumo.

He gasps, annoyed.

Him: Bhabha that's so selfish of you. Is it about my family coming here. I'll talk to

them and make they know their place in your life baby. Am sorry they made you uncomfortable in your own home.

Me: Not everything is about your family. Andifuni qha and you can take him there yourself. Wohlulwa yintoni?

He chuckles, from annoyed to angry in a second.

Him: Mbaliyothando, I have 4 classes from the next hour going on then I have to go to the club, balance the books it's month end after all. Please stop being selfish and childish man!

Haybo, then why the hell is he shouting.

Me: As long as Sihle is still around andiyi, am not comfortable with him around.

He lifts his head up making eye contact, he drops his spoon back to the bowl.

Him: What did he do bhabha?

He says looking straight into my eyes, I keep quiet and continue chewing.

Him: Mbaliyothando am talking to you!
I startle.

Him: Awukwazu uthetha?

Duhh I can, kanti yintoni ngalo?

Me: The other day when he was here he
uhm.... hugged me then moved his hands to my
butt but I moved them just before they
could reach my butt.

He looks at me for me to continue.

Me: He also tried to kiss me which lead to me
kicking him out, then he looked at me
undressing me with his eyes, I was wearing
uhmm a... a net top and shorts.

Him: Is that all?

Me: Ye....yes.

I say with tears flowing.

He rubs the tip of his nose, his veins are out,
he is clenching his teeth.

Him: Come here.

He says pointing at his lap, I get up from where I was seated and sit on his lap. One of my favorite places to sit on.

Me: Am sorry I didn't tell you when it happened, I didn't think it mattered.

Him: It matters bhabha, so that's why you've been avoiding going to Gramms house the past few days.

I nod.

Him: Why didn't you tell me this earlier hee? Am sorry to bring this up but I don't want a repeat of what happened with Zwane. This thing of you sweeping things under the carpet isn't going to work. Are we clear?

Me: I didn't want you to hit him again, did you see how bad he looked? Well I thought you did that and I thought you were going to do something worse than that, this time around. He laughs.

Him: Am sorry I didn't mean to laugh but haybo am I some sort of monster ndide

ndoyikwe nguwe. You out of all people should know that am no hooligan and if I did hit you would have heard from me first. I just told him to stay the fuck away and this time around I'll make sure to hit so when he comes back ezoxela, axele eyenziwe nguMphati.

Me: Am sorry I just didn't know what to think when he showed up all bruised.

He pecks my lips.

Him: It's okay baby. Bhabha if you ever and I mean ever Mbaliyothando feel uncomfortable around someone you tell me, I do not care if they are family or what you come first the moment you feel unsafe around that specific person call me. Sivene?

I nod.

He wipes my tears with his thumbs and kisses both my eyes.

Him: Am sorry, I love you.

He places his hands on my boobs.

Me: I love you too. Wanna suck on them?

He laughs.

Him: No mam!

SIMTHANDILE JAXA.

Am meeting up with Cynthia at her house. Am driving there on my own, which is weird am used to Bongani driving me since I started dating I don't remember getting behind the wheel. This car is so lonely without him, I put on Aubrey Qwana - Umbhulelo, damn I love this Gent so much he is one of the best artists in South Ahh.

I really want to attend his concert which is next week Friday at Mpumalanga but I guess I will have to stay home cause my so called in-laws are coming, Nkosi called them.

As am driving I receive a call from my lawyer.

Him: Simmy your divorce papers are ready.

Me: Can you please drop them off at my new place, I'll send you the address. I want to serve Nkosi the papers myself.

Him: On it mam, I'll deliver them myself.

Me: Thank you so, so much.

Him: The pleasure is all mine, have a good day.

Me: Same to you, once again thank you.

I say and he drops the call.

I smile to myself, my life is finally getting together thanks to Bongani, well Cynthia also.

Ariana Grande - Break Free plays next, Imao is this really my break free. I can finally spread my wings.

I park my car in the driveway, Cynthia is married to one of the few rich mense in South Ahh so yeah she lives in Sandton with her husband, Arnold Akpofure.

I ring the doorbell and she lets me in.

Me: I bought champagne baby!

I scream to the top of my lungs.

Her: Ok, what are we celebrating?

Me: Am sorry, I hope your husband is not around.

I say lowering my voice.

Her: Nope, he went to work. It's just me and you.

Me: Good I've finally come to my senses, ndikubalisele.

She laughs.

Her: Girl you are glowing, what's going on?

Nkosi ukuphethe kahle?

I laugh

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 57.



MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI



7 MONTHS LATER

Me: Tata, am leaving. I'll see you when I come back. I say taking my bag and kissing the sleeping Owe.

Him: If that Mphati boy trys anything funny call me or Zano.

He says and walks me out.

I walk away and get to a Taxi station, me and Lurra broke up. I decided to check up on him, I haven't seen him in a very long time. I hope he is good though, after how we ended things. As am in the taxi my phone rings and it Lonke, I decide to ignore it. I will call him later.

After getting of the taxi I had to walk to his house, which helped me prepare for what I was going to say when I got there I don't know why am going there. I still have the keys so I open the gate and walk in, am met by the smell of alcohol and bottles. I walk to what used to be our bedroom, he is sleeping

on the floor with a bottle of alcohol in his hand. I first change into his clothes cause am wearing a white dress and I pick him up from the floor and put him on the bed. I kiss his forehead after covering him with a blanket, I couldn't resist I tried to resist but I couldn't.

As am cleaning I feel someone grinding on me, first of all am bending. It can only be Lurra, he smells horrible the alcohol smells bad.

Me: Ha.a mani Luncumo.

I say turning to face him.

Him: Bhabha why did you block me?

I blocked him after all those hurtful things he said.

Me: Ndicela uyohlamba tuu, I will warm food for you. You smell horrible.

He laughs.

Him: As you wish mam.

He plants a kiss on my cheek and walks away. Damn, he is so sexy. Honestly speaking I miss him but I don't think I can ever forgive him. I bite my lower lip as I watch him walk away. He is walking bare footed with a short only nothing at the top.

I dish up for him and cover his food while he is still bathing, I continue with cleaning and he whistles.

Him: Umuhle bhabha, my clothes look good on you man. As they should vele.

LUNCUMO MPHATI

I whistle once again and walk to the kitchen, I get to spoons and the covered plate and make my way to her.

Me: Can you please eat with me.

Her: Sorry I can't am in a hurry, I left Owe with my dad.

Me: Am sorry bhabha, I didn't mean to hurt you.

Her: Well you did Luncumo. Am not up for this am leaving. Don't forget to fetch your clothes from the washing line.

She says walking to Amina's room.

Me: Bhabha please can we talk. I say following behind her.

Her: If am here talking to you who do you think is taking care of my son?

I close my eyes.

Me: Our son bhabha, our son. I say in a whisper.

Her: Ohh now you remember you have a son you haven't seen in 5 fucking months? Am glad you still remember Luncumo. You do know he is turning 1 very soon or have you forgotten.

Me: I haven't bhabha.

Her: Good.

She says pushing me out of the room, she then locks.

She comes out minutes later dressed in a white dress which is hugging her body perfectly, show all her curves.

Me: Bhabha can we talk. Please just 20 minutes of your time.

Her: Voetsek Luncumo! Tsek!

She says walking out.

.....

On the night of the heist all was going well I swear to God, until Que got shot and I started panicking he told me to leave like we agreed earlier on if one gets hurt we walk away and leave him behind. I swear I tried to take him with but he insisted I leave him there, he reminded me of bhabha and Owe I tried telling him I can't live him there, all he said was "Hamba Luncumo, I promise I'll be back."

There was a mini shoot out and a few members of the bloods survived and many died, we left with 18 cars leaving two behind

we were suppose to return with 20 cars but we couldn't, all is well though.

So I walk into the house after unlocking the door and I hear sobs, mini sobs I turn on the light and there is Bhabha crying sited on the floor. I rush to her and shush her.

Her: Am so happy you are okay. I....I....I thought something happened to you.

She says hugging me back tighter. It turns out there was a shoot out at the club after she left, so I understand.

Her: I tried calling you and you didn't answer your phone. I was worried about you.

She says wailing louder.

I pick her up and take her to our room and prepare a warm bath for her, she's freaking cold. Her eyes are puffy and red. After bathing we cuddle up and she sleeps after a few hours.

2 weeks later I haven't seen or spoken to Que, am worried as hell. Godmother has his

man searching for him, in the morning a rough knock wakes us up and we rush to the door, it's one of Godmother's man.

Him: Good morning, am sorry to disturb you so early in the morning am looking for a Luncumo Mphati.

I roll my eyes.

Bhabha responds.

Her: This is him sir, how can we help you? Am loosing patience, I need to know if Que is alive or what.

Him: Sir am here to inform you that your friend Qaphela was found shot a few times on his chest and stomach....

Bhabha gasps, balancing with the door frame.

Her: Where is he? Is he okay? What happened?

She says panicking.

Him: Mam, he is in coma and doctors are not sure if he will make it or not. He is not responding to all the medication.

I close the door on his face, how did I let this happen? What am I going to say to his mom and dad they've been worried about him. Damn we shouldn't have went on that bloody heist, I swear our love for money will put us in great danger.

Weeks passed Que hasn't improved he is still the same, am drowning myself in alcohol a lot and bhabha is starting to get on my nerves.

So there came a day where I insulted get about her childhood, Zwane, living her parents house and coming to leave with a man emncinci and how much of a disappointment she is to her parents for falling pregnant at a young age and a lot of other things. Few days later I come back drunk from the club and she's packing their clothes, I tell her she is not going anywhere. Makalale and stop being dramatic, she insisted on leaving the following day early in the morning so I locked her up in the house and she called her

brother who broke the burglars and took them away. I called her when I got home to an empty house and she told me how much she hated me and she dumped me.

My life became worse without her and I drowned myself in alcohol more. She then blocked me everywhere, so yes, I haven't heard from her till then, then boom she shows up at a my doorstep.

Insert 58.



MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI.



As soon as I got home I went straight to my room, I didn't even bother checking up on my dad, Ami and my Owe. Am not in the mood, I throw myself on the bed and cry my lungs

out. As am crying the door opens and someone sits next to me and removes the blanket, it's Zano.

Him: Ntyatyambo ka bhuti, yini? Kubuhlungu phi?

He says brushing my back.

Him: Yini mama kubuhlungu ndawoni last born?

He gets inside my blankets and pulls me closer to his chest and gently lays my head there.

I wake up with a banging headache and Zano is not next to me. There are pills, a bottle of water and a note, I take it and read it:

"Am sure you'll wake up with a terrible headache drink up, I had to rush somewhere

I love you

Ubhuti"

I laugh at the last part and "drink up" like

"ubhuti" said. I get out of my room and head

straight to the bathroom to wash my face, I walk to my Ami's room ik one thing for sure my dad would never sleep with Owe as long as Ami is still alive. She's fast asleep with Owe next to her they are sleeping peacefully so I decide not to disturb them and make food for myself. Well I take the leftover pizza, I guess they had pizza for supper.

I sit on the couch and scroll through Facebook and I decide to unblock Ta Lurra and go through his profile a little, I come across a picture of us me, him and Owe posted a few hours ago captioned with "the only people my heartbeats for" mxm I throw my phone away and scroll through TV channels and finally settle with wrestling. Luncumo Mphati ungibhorile shame, a few minutes later my phone rings and it's an unknown number, I answer it.

Me: Mbali Mandoyi, Yintoni?

I say with so much laziness and boredom in me.

The person laughs, a Godly laugh.

NguLuncumo.

Me: Yintoni ebsuku abantu belele Mphati?

Him: I just wanted to hear your voice nothing much.

Me: Ohh ok.

Him: Are you fine bhabha, you sound like you are sick.

You see? He knows me so damn well but andimfuni.

Me: Am fine Zulu. You saw me earlier on and I was perfectly fine, right.

Him: Yes, I saw you but you don't sound fine. Are you sure bhabha?

Me: Stop acting like you care, stop boring me tuu. Ngibusy, bye.

Him: Bye I lo-

Me: Mxm.

I dropped the call and cried once again, am not over all those things Lurra said to me. Am not one to open up and I opened up to him not knowing that one day he'll use it against me. The person I trusted the most betrayed me more than anyone, wow. Everything hurts really, I wasted my time loving him damn I even gave him a fucken son. I still can't believe that's how Luncumo thought of me, I hold the pillow tighter and sob
Insert 59.



LUNCUMO MPHATI



I know I've hurt bhabha so bad but at this point I'd do anything for her to forgive me, by anything I mean anything. I love

Mbaliyothando Mandoyi with every little thing in me and I am so sorry for all the things I said to her, if she's ignoring me I don't know how am going to fix things between the two of us. Bhabha is a cry baby am sure she cries herself to sleep and I hate the fact that am the one behind that heartbreak, I didn't mean all the things I said to her. Am not going to blame it on alcohol and the fact that I was hurt, I'll just have to make a plan and get her to my house, she blocked me once again.

Am in the kitchen making myself food and my grandma just walks in without knocking. Yoh ha.a naye lo ngomnye nje odikayo.

Me: Knock sisi knock. You can't just walk right in, akho kwakho apha.

Her: You are sober, ayifani nawe leyo. What changed? You decided to get over your hurt, you even cleaned.

Me: Nope, am not the one who cleaned, bhabha did all this. I woke up this one day with no bottle in my hand for the first time in months and I was in bed covered with a blanket, music was playing so I went to check what's up and there was your daughter in law cleaning.

She ululated.

Her: Am so happy you guys are back together, it took you forever.

I laugh a little.

Me: How I wish we were back together but miss doesn't want me back.

Her: Kufanele Luncumo you hurt the poor kid and her coming here to clean for you shows she still cares and loves you. No matter how much you keep on hurting her she still comes back to you. She's hurt, give her time.

I nod.

Me: I need a favour mama.

Her: Yoh ha.a Luncumo uyawaqalile, yintoni?

Me: Call bhabha and ask her to meet you here.

Her: For ntoni ngoku Luncumo?

Me: Mama please do as I say and please cook something nice you think bhabha will like.

Her: Who are you to just order me around like I am not your mother.

Me: Am your son girl.

Her: Ndizakhaba uphambane, unegirl efana nam?

MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI

Our lesson just ended and I receive a call from Lurra's grandma, yoh ha.a lomfazi. I look at it ring she'll call at least 3 times if she's serious.

" You ain't going to take that?" Says someone behind me.

I turn around it's Prof. Ngubane.

Me: She'll call atleast 3 time if she's serious.

He laughs and just then my phone rings.

Me: This is the third ring, she's serious.

He laughs, planting a kiss on my cheek I look around and am the last one left.

Him: See you around pretty lady.

Haybo, what was that? I answer.

Me: Makhulu?

Her: Hey baby, how are you?

Me: Am fine mama, how can I help you? Is Owe giving you any problems.

Her: No, not at all. Can you please meet me at Luncumo's house in the next 3 hours.

I look at the time on my wrist watch.

Why would this gogo want to meet at this time of the night, I will only be able to get there around 19:00 not at 17:00.

Me: Mama I will only be able to get there around 7 late. Can I come tomorrow.

Her: 7 is perfect baby, as long as I can see you today.

Me: Oh ohk, I'll be there makhulu.

Yoh ha.a it's 15:36 right now and this was my last class, am so hungry. I'll walk to McDonald's it's not far from campus. I wish I could go through a drive through while walking this waiting for my order to be called shit doesn't cut it.

As am sipping on my coldrink taking pictures, a call from Zano comes through i answer. Zano does not call unless it's serious, so yes I get worried a little everytime he calls.

Me: Bhuti.

Him: Ntyatyambo ka bhuti, kunjani?

Me: Am good kuhambani?

Him: Am here to fetch you and I don't know where the hell to find you.

Me: Am at McDonald's, I will meet halfway.

Him: Sho.

He says and drops the call. I take my things and walk out meeting him half way, it's not like Zano to fetch am sure he had a meeting

this side and his next one is somewhere on a way home those are the only times the big guy fetches me.

On our way home, we are having a conversation and laughing.

I decide to view my status and to my surprise Zano posted I go through his status, he posted pictures of him and some girls hands you can tell the girl was the one taking the pictures.

Me: You and Vuyolwam are so secretive these days what's up with y'all.

He chokes as I mention Vuyo's name then blushes a little.

Me: Am sure she has a boyfriend and she's not telling me who the hell it is, wena ngapha you are posting "dinner dates with the loml" kanti anifuni ndiyazi uba ndiyajola. I want to know who the hell your partners are.

He points at his phone while he is driving. I take and he tells me the pin which is "Vuyolwam".

Him: Go to the gallery and search for a folder titled "sthandwa sam".

I do as told and to my surprise its pictures and videos of him and Vuyolwam my jaw drops.

Me: You guys are dating!

I scream with excitement, this is shocking.

Me: Why didn't you guys say anything, why didn't I even notice? I mean how can you keep your hands of each other for that long. I can chill with this 2 people for hours and they didn't give me any signs, I didn't even suspect a thing.

Me: For how long?

Him: It's been a blissful 7 months!

Me: That long, where have I been kanti?

Him: You were hurting over Luncumo kaloku wena.

After taking a bath I ask Zano to drive me to the taxi rank, he agrees and drives me there. I hate taking taxis with a passion bethuna.

I get to Lurra's house and the lights are out, yoh hayike. I decide to knock and no one answers so I let myself in and Natalie Taylor - Surrender is playing. I turn on the lights and make my way to the living room and there's is that charming bloody swine.

Him: Turn off the lights sisi, it's called a candle lit dinner.

Me: I don't care am leaving.

Him: Not so fast Mrs Me, you are not telling me I wasted my time cooking and planning this only for you to walk out on me.

Khazithande.

I swear I almost laughed as he said khazithande.

He walks up to me and takes off my jacket and my handbag.

Me: Luncumo I don't have time for this, am leaving. I have things to do bring my things! I shout, he laughs walking away.

Damn idiot.

I follow him to our bedroom, yes I said OUR bedroom, I take my things and walk out but he gently grabs my hand and kisses me. The next thing his hand is in my breast, he is squeezing it.

Him: Mhhh they are so big and soft.

Damn nigga is moaning in my mouth. Am enjoying all of this I swear.

Me: Luncumo.....

I say in between the kiss.

Him: Shhh.

I keep quiet, he sneaks his hands into my baggy sweatpants and fingers me. He pushes me into our room then the bed, he looks at me with hungry eyes I nod at him. He gets on the bed and kisses me, we both take of each other's clothes I haven't had this with him in

a very long time. He slips his finger in once again.

Him: Mhh you are so wet bhabha.

He says kissing my inner thighs. OMG am craving him so much, he is circling my vigiana with his fingers.

Me: Mhhhhh Luncumo please put it in, please. He chuckles.

Him: Are you sure you want this bhabha?

Me: Ahhh yes baby!

I say as he shoves his tongue in.

Him: Bhabha I can't hear you.

Me: I want you, I want it, I want this. Am sure, baby am sure!

I shout.

He slides into me slowly and moves out then in again.

Me: A...mmmmh.....condom.

Him: I don't have them... Shit!

Insert 60.





MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI



I shuffle a little around the bed and I open my eyes lazily and look around and there is Lurra looking at me and he is brushing my hair. He smiles at me.

Him: Good morning baby.

I look at him and get up, Luncumo can be annoying even after he just woke up.

Me: Luncumo where the hell are my clothes?

Him: In the machine sisi, I decided to wash them for you.

Me: Luncumo Voetsek man! Uyadika!

I say throwing a pillow at him.

Me: If this is your way of delaying me uyanya, am leaving.

I attempt to open the wardrobe but this fucker locked it.

Me: Luncumo Mphati I swear to my ancestors and God I'll kill you, uyanya moss.

Him: Awusemuhle, yiza ndincamise.

He says coming to me since am sitting on the edge of the bed, he kisses me and I respond.

Me: Luncumo!

I say pushing him away, he laughs and throws his boxers and a t-shirt at me.

Him: Am sure you are hungry after everything we did last night.

He says smirking.

He knows I won't leave while wearing this shit, am sick and tired of Lurra mna, serious.

After getting dressed I follow him to the kitchen and there he is making food, it smells good and I won't say that to him.

Him: Look who decided to grace me with her presence. Come help me.

Me: Yenza into ephelayo, ndilambile.

He laughs and comes to me kissing my cheek.
Luncumo uyandidika at this point.

Me: Luncumo can I please have my phone?

He points on top of the cupboard and continues singing. I click my tongue and walk to our bedroom, eish I mean his. I take his toiletries and make my way to the bathroom, he walks in while am bathing.

Him: Can I please come in. You've been here for too long.

I nod.

He kneels down next to the bathtub.

Him: Bring your hand baby.

I give him my hand and he kisses.

Him: Bhabha I love you, am sorry bhabha for everything I did to you and those hurtful things I said, am sorry sthandwa. I love you and I was hurting am not using this as an excuse I just want you to know I was not okay mentally. Damn I don't even know how

to apologise bhabha but am sorry, I know I hurt you badly and am sorry.

Me: It's fine am over that.

He laughs.

Him: You are not sthandwa sam, you might not forgive me now but please do. Can we please work things between the two of us, I love you Mbali.

He puts his hand in the water and he takes it out.

Him: Ayabanda bhabha lamanzi, let me get you a towel and get you out.

He walks away and comes back with a towel and helps me get out then he wipes me, he picks me up.

Him: Like the good old times sthandwa sam. He says kissing my neck.

Me: I miss you, I really do but the disrespect Lurra. Am not gonna stand it.

He looks at me with his eyes a bit watery.

Him: I don't blame you bhabha, I also wouldn't stand the disrespect.

He lotions me and he kisses me every now and then, he kept on whispering he is sorry and he loves me and then he got me dressed up in warm clothes and then we went to eat.

Me: I think I should leave am sure my brother is worried about me. Plus your granny has Owe with him so I'll rest a little and do my assignment.

Him: No problem it was nice having you here.

Am walking in the front door and dad is there drinking coffee, I check the time and it's half eleven, yoh ha.a.

Him: Isipho.

Me: Tatam endimthandayo unjani.

Him: Am good, where were you? Owe is not here, I last saw you yesterday in the morning before you went to school.

Me: I was at Zano's place taima.

Zano walks in, dad stares at him.

Him: Did Mbali sleep at your place.

Zano: She did taima, don't worry.

He nods and walks away.

Zano: Where did you sleep?

Me: Ebhedini.

Zano: Kabani cause you were not sleeping in your own bed.

He gets closer and sniffs.

Zano: That scent Mbali, you slept at baby daddy's house and the clothes.

MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI!

Me: Shhh, do you want your dad to hear you.

I say hitting him lightly on the shoulder.

Zano: So did you guys uhmm you know, get down.

My eyes pop out.

Zano: And she's blushing.

I cover my face giggling. He cracks up laughing.

SIMTHANDILE JAXA.

Bongani walks in and sits next to me. So Nkosi signed the divorce papers and am no longer his wife am so happy honestly, Bongani made sure he signed them at first he refused then Bongani said he'll talk to him and they'll settle this one man to man. Am glad I have Bongani with me. He brushes my bump.

Him: How are my babies treating you Mnkam.

Me: Today was different from the other days, you know.

Him: Am happy Simmy I had my first ever kids by you. Three fucking kids at the same time, am happy.

He says kissing my stomach.

Him: Go and bath Mnkam am taking you out for lunch.

He helps me up and we walk together to the bathroom.

So a few weeks back me and Bongz went to see the doctor and we found out I was carrying 3 babies, 3 babies am happy.

We took a shower together cause I wanted to shower with my man. We got dressed and immediately left. We were both wearing a bit of black and a bit of red he was looking so cute, I love this dude.

Me: Where are we going babe.

Him: On a date Simmy.

Me: A date on a Thursday, we normally go on dates on Fridays.

Him: Izinto ziyajika mama.

He says kissing my hand.

After a little while he parks in front of a big house and there a plenty of cars here, serious expensive cars.

Me: Babe what's going on here.

Him: Nothing much, we won't stay long here.

I nod and we get out, mind you am walking barefooted cause I didn't want to wear any type of shoe. He doesn't knock he just walks right in and as we walk in I see his brother I forgot his name but I still remember his face and he is sitting next to his wife this seems like a formal dinner, everyone here looks good they are dressed to kill but they can't expect me to dress to kill also. Am looking at all these eyes staring at me and am slowly but surely getting scarred, Bongani squeezes my hand.

Him: Don't worry you'll be fine, they are sweet and very welcoming.

Old lady: Bongani mfana wam usuze wafika, I thought you weren't coming anymore.

Him: Am here mama don't worry, you know how woman take so long to get ready so Mrs me over here took her own sweet time.

Girl1: She's not even wearing shoes mara she took so long to prepare.

I remember the brother's name, it's Sbongiseni him and Bongani are a year apart from one another, his wife Simphiwe notices me.

Her: Simthandile!

She says excited, the last time I saw her was when me and Bongani went to her and her husband's house after we got back from the club and I met them there, we spoke briefly since I was rushing.

Sbo: Mamnune, unjani kodwa.

The brother says after we have exchanged hugs.

Him: Mama this is my mother uMamgcina and that's my father ubab' Zulu.

I nod..

Him: Mom and dad this is your daughter in-law, Simthandile Jaxa soon to be Zulu.

He says and I choke on my saliva.

We settle down and start dishing up.

Bab' Zulu: Manje Bongani why is she not wearing shoes? Kuyabanda phantsi.

Him: Uthe yena akafuni ukufaka zicathulo, futhi I wasn't going to argue with her mina. I don't have energy to argue with a pregnant woman.

They all turn to look at him, am sure they are shocked my bump is small not that visible.

Mamgcina: Phakama makoti ngibone.

Him: Phakama mkam bakubone, uthi ukuhamba kancane.

I got up, am tired mina the travelling bafethu.

Him: 3 kids mama at the same time. When was the last time we had triplets in the family.

Bongani is not one to brag but at this point he is bragging with no care in the world futhi. He hugs me tightly.

The woman ulelate and his brothers whistle, am so shy I sit down and Bongani can't stop

talking about his kids, he even had a scan with him explaining to the family where is the head and stuff. I don't know how he Bongani does it mara I wouldn't be able to explain the scan mina.

www.ebookscat.com

Insert 61.



MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI.



We are sitting on my bed facing the roof and Owam is sleeping on top of me, this one is a mental case guys. They came here because Zano called them here so they can stay with me a little while so I won't be left out, while he goes out on a date with Owe and Vuyolwam.

Chuma: Baby you'll have to let go of Lurra, I hate seeing you like this.

Lonke: Let her cry, we all deal with things in different ways and this is her way of getting over Lurra.

Owam: So Lurra calls you over to his house, you guys have sex he makes breakfast, you guys have sex once again and you guys have sex again before you leave and he walks you to the taxi rank and then he goes on a date wearing suits looking all elegant, then he posts pictures of themselves on Facebook and they wear bikinis and shorts he also posts them.

Me: I know Wam, I know. It hurts how the hell did he move on so fast?

Lonke: Honestly baby you should also move on, I know you love Lurra but there are plenty of fish in the sea.

Chuma: So you are saying she must get another boyfriend so she can heal her broken feelings?

Lonke nods.

Chuma: I don't think so, I know I said she must move on from Lurra but I didn't say she must move from one guy to another. Mbali must take her time to heal, she can't move from one guy to another. She'll only get hurt not only that she'll be looking for Lurra in all those guys, let her heal first and then she can look for another relationship.

Wam: I second Chuma.

Me: I love you guys.

Lonke & Chuma: We love you too unicorn.

Wam: What's there not to love about us.

So Luncumo posted pictures of him and this other chick not only that but she was in a bikini and she was in shorts which drove me crazy, I feel like am being made a fool here and there was this one posted recently he

was wearing a suit and they looked good, it seemed like they were on a party for seriously rich people, I don't know man. Am hurting, it hurts.

Chuma: Am sure you are hungry nana, come let's get you something to eat. You've been crying the whole day muntuza.

We all get up heading for the kitchen.

VUYOLWAM VENFOLO

So my baby is taking me out on a date, am really enjoying being Zano's girlfriend he said he'll be bringing Owe with I love that kid man. So I just finished preparing for our date with big baby Zano and small baby Owe. Zano can be a baby when he wants to. Dating Zano has been amazing and he also helped me through a lot of things and somehow managed to get me registered at school, I'll be starting next year I'll be studying medicine,

I've always wanted to be a doctor so yeah.
Am honestly excited to finally do what I've
always wanted to do and loved.

My phone rings.

Him: Mama am here where are you?

Me: Am coming baby, I'll be there in a few
minutes.

Him: Can't wait to see you, ndiyakuthanda
Vuyo.

Me: Nam ndiyakthanda.

I take my handbag and say my goodbyes to
the kids and my mom is better she went back
to work.

I get in the car and kiss his lips.

Me: Wait baby before you drive off let me
take Owe and sit with him here.

I get out and take him out from his baby
seat.

Me: We can go.

I say as soon as I've settled down and put my
seatbelt on.

Me: You disturbed our bonding session wena muntuza.

I say to Owe.

Me: Your mom gave birth to you while me and your uncle over here were having our bonding session.

Zano laughs.

Him: Awuyeke ingane Vuyo, mara nawe boy awuna'timing.

He says laughing.

Me: So how is Mbali?

Him: When I left home she was fine just thinking about Luncumo.

Me: Am sure she didn't take what she saw on Facebook well, cause she sent me screenshots of Lurra with some yellow mellow chick, they were posted a few hours ago.

Him: Woah, woah what?

Me: Yes, he went as far as tagging her which I think pissed her off. Plus he invited her to

the house 2 days ago and they kind of had sex now she feels used.

Zano is slowly but surely getting pissed.

Him: I can't believe that boy is taking my younger sister for a ride.

LUNCUMO MPHATI

I excuse myself from the rest of the gentlemen and walk to a place with less noise and dial bhabha's number. She doesn't answer, I try her again and this time around it takes me straight to voicemail. As am walking away my phone rings, it's a private number.

Me: Luncumo Mphati, hello.

Voice: Just the person am looking for, Mr Mphati your brother Qaphela woke up and he asked me to call you first before anyone else.

Me: What? When did this happen? Listen am on my way mam.

I walk over to the gentlemen and say my goodbyes and then Ntando and my sisters I don't even know their names.

Me: Thank you for the invite but I'll see you guys later , it's a family emergency.

I decided to give this relationship with my siblings a try.

Him: Did anything happen to your son?

Me: No, it's not him. He is perfectly fine. Let me love and leave you.

I say and walk away, rushing away one of the sisters gave me her car, she said I can return it anytime. I get in the car and drive off in high speed.

He laughs as I make my way in.

Him: Kanti nawe uyayinxiba isuit, benitshata nobhabha or you went to church?

Me: Nope, I was invited to a business what-what.

He laughs.

Me: 7 bloody months ntwana, we almost switched off the machines.

Him: I know you would never, even if it took you 6 years.

He is right I would never.

Me: Uyinja kwedini, 6 bullets nja and you survived. I haven't been coping without you man.

Insert 62.



MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI.



Waking up early is pretty much annoying and very much tiring, I pull the blankets up and cover my face dad pulls them down and drops them to the floor.

Him: Mbali wake up, show some love for school and am getting late for work Mbali.

Me: You are your own boss taima.

Him: That doesn't mean I can do as I please Miss Mandoyi. Are you going to school or are you going to school?

Me: It's not like you gave me much of a choice now.

Him: I already ran a bath for you dearest daughter.

So my dad has his own company, they make offices, houses and what not using containers and he now wants to make cupboards, wardrobes and other things honestly I don't know. I mean he always had this container business before he was arrested then it landed in the wrong hands his younger brother. I get up from my bed and make my way to the bathroom making sure to make it fast cause Mr is late. As soon as am done with everything we make our way out and he

drives me to school. I only have two classes, we are starting with Prof. Ngubane, I am most definitely not looking forward it but hey I don't have a choice. I bump into him as am making my way to class.

Him: Good morning Miss Mandoyi, how are you.

Me: Am good Prof, what about you.

Him: Ayy siyacenga akufani yazi mara mangingathola wena yellow mellow, all will be well.

I smile at him.

Me: Am late for my first class Prof, I will see you around.

I say rushing off.

Him: But we are go-

Me: Am late chat later.

I get into class and settle down on the fifth row putting my eye glasses on.

My classmates are chatting up a storm like it's no one's business, he walks in and stares

right at my direction I look down and page through my textbook.

Him: Good morning class so we have only one hour together, can we please work together. He says sitting on top of his table.

Calvin: Nerdy, how about we go for a drink after the second class.

Me: Cal am a very busy woman, I can't have you wasting my time.

I say to him.

Him: Yazi ngiyayifela ngawe four eyes, ngizifela blind wena muhleza.

Me: Nginendoda yam ethi mina plus sinengcosi, he's turning one in a few months.

Him: Bengicela ukubayi' stepfather wena ntomb' emhlophe.

Prof: So Calvin and Mbali see it fit to flirt in my class, bengicela nizofundisa mina ngihlale phantsi.

We both look at each other and I adjust my glasses.

LUNCUMO MPHATI.

This weekend has been going absolutely good for me, we just pulled a vv big diamond heist and we cashed in a lot of money, we all got paid atleast R200 000, who wouldn't be happy. The only thing that's not making me happy about this is the fact that I still don't have my woman and son with me.

Me: Let me call her.

Her phone rings and she answers on the third ring.

Her: Am in class Tolo, please call me later. She says and drops the call immediately, I smile to myself she still calls me Tolo even now. My phone rings, it's Godmother.

Her: My dearest son, please meet me at my office. I have a proposal for you and your brother, this will bring in a lot of money.

Me: A lot of money you say, how much is it.

Her: About 40 million, a car and diamond heist all in one day.

Me: 40 million, am in. Let me call Ntando and inform him. I'll be there at 3 the latest.

Her: As long as you get here Mphati.

She drops the call.

I smile to myself, this is dangerous but I love it, it's part of who I am. I no longer deal with drugs but diamond heists, expensive jewellery, car heists and many other serious heists. Kwaze kwamnandi ukubanemali ngimncane. More heists, more money ne soft life.

SIMTHANDILE JAXA

Me: Dibongz am hungry.

I say turning my attention to Bongani.

Him: You just ate Simmy, since when do you eat so much.

Me: Since you decided to knock me up Mageba, deal with your doings.

He laughs.

Him: My doings not our doings Ms Jaxa soon to be Mrs Zulu. Don't worry I'll order for you.

Me: I love you baby.

Him: I love you to hell and never back baby.

Me: Why hell baby?

He laughs getting up from the couch, he comes back a few minutes later and settles down.

As we are still watching the movie a knock comes through, we both look at each other because it was a very violent knock.

Him: Eyy kodwa jesu wam, senzeni emhlabeni wakho.

Me: Sonephi so that sizolungisa, mxm.

We both get up to attend the door and to my surprise it's Yolanda, one of Nkosi's wives.

Me: Hey Yollie, how can we help you.

Her: How can we help you my left foot, uyeval?

She shouts.

Him: You can come in.

She walks inside.

Her: So you got this bastard man of yours to kill my husband!

Us: Wait, what?!

Her: As if cheating on him and getting pregnant was not enough, you got this thing of yours to kill my man, uNkosinathi wam!

Me: One thing I won't let you do is you coming into my house and disrespecting me and my man. If you can't talk to us like elders, please take your flat ass and see yourself out.

She looks at us and clicks her tongue.

Me: Ohh and one last thing...

I say and she turns.

Her: Yes.

Me: Sorry for your loss I guess, R.I.P wethu. Kukuwe ba uyamfuna u'sorry or not, he wasn't a good man wethu so yeah.

Bongani looks at me shocked.

I shrug my shoulders and sit on the couch.

Him: "R.I.P wethu" khuzeka Simmy.

MBALIYOTHANDO MANDOYI.

Am back at home and studying after a long stressful day, my phone beeps and I look at it. It's a message and it reads as follows:

"I'd love to take you out for lunch smomondiya, yours future husband Prof. Ngubane."

Me: Who the hell is Prof?

I slightly hit my forehead.

Me: LoProf wempundu ezinkulu onxiba ibrentwood. Yoh ha.a akamfitshane.

Prof. Ngubane is so short I look down when I talk to him, the kiss he kind of stood on his toes and kissed my cheek. I crack up laughing. My phone beeps once again and I take a look at the message, I gasp with a

hand over my mouth. Prof. Ngubane just sent me R15 000 just like that, for no absolute reason. Where the hell does he get such money from. I only had R364 in my acc and now I have 15 364. Another text comes in, "It's my pleasure Mnkam, take yourself out enjoy life."

Daily new African novels download here
www.ebookscat.com